

## DIARY OF A SHE WOLF

### Insert 1

Its hard to be a woman in the 21st century, constantly scared of the unknown; constantly looking over our shoulders or its just me? Hi, My name is Mellisa James, my parents call me MJ but all my friends call me Lisa. I study Criminology in U.J.

Ok, my biography is the last thing you want to know because its not interesting, i am from a middle class family in Free State, with two older brothers.

Few moths ago, I did something, or should i say, something happened! Something i can not fully explain.

I am a 3rd year student in U.J, I rent a house in the location. Like i have said, its hard to be a woman in this century because this world has become a men's world. Every time a woman walks down the street she is always afraid of being attacked, brutal killed or raped. I lived in that fear all my life especial here in Soweto, everyone knows how dangerous this place could be. I was sharing a house with Nicki but she was forever out, leaving me alone bored with movies to watch and books to read. I got used to the place and got too comfortable. As the time goes i slept alone in the house without my heart pounding. I heard weird sounds out side and not ran to a hiding place. I went to the tuckshop without a scissors in my pocket. I got out of my bedroom to the bathroom without thinking twice. When i came back from campus i walked to the taxi rank without being scared that someone might hijack me for my long dreadlocks. These days people steal and even steal dreadlocks. I have had mine since i was 15, they are pretty long now. I got used to Ekasi, i made friends with the guys who hung around the tuckshop. I got too comfortable thinking its Free state where my home is, thinking everyone who smiles at me meant it. Till one Friday when it got clear to me that my comfortability was a mistake of a life time.

I got back to my house from campus around six, as usually when i got to the house Nicki was in her room with her friends, door wide open, standing infront of a full length mirror and applying make up on her face. I greeted and went straight to my bedroom, i threw my bag on the floor and myself on the bed. Fridays were the worst days of my life, a constant reminder that i was a loner. I am not good at making friends- period. "When are you planning to stop being a bed potato" said Nicki leaning on my bedroom door frame, looking hot. I lifted my head and looked at her, "why bother, i know you'll never go out. Enjoy your movies houza" she continued. Then she said her good byes and left with her friends. After a sometime of thinking about nothing constructive but what movie to watch or what book to read i got up and changed to a short

sleeping shirt. I went to the kitchen, took 1L of yogurt and went straight to my bedroom. I opened my laptop and watched Devious maids, my favourite series of all times. That's how a perfect Friday night looked to me; good movie/series or book and something yummy to eat. I put my earphones on everytime i am watching something on my lap top. Around 8, i got a call from my eldest brother - Kwanda. We chat for a very long time which makes me think he was calling me with 100%. While i was on the phone with him i heard people talking but because i wasn't worried i didn't care to check, i thought it was people from his side of the line. Right after hanging up with my brother, my bedroom door flipped open, two guys threw themselves in, i felt my heart knocking my to chest, my eyes wide opened, my tongue tied! I just sat there and looked at them, their faces look familiar. The nerve! They didn't even wear masks. "Black angel" one of them said moving towards me, they both had big knives in their hands. I wanted to scream but i couldn't find my voice, i wanted to move but my bones couldn't. "Don't be scared we are not here to hurt you" said the other one packing my lap top, phone, sneakers, jewellery, cologne, shoes and everything portable, that they could sell fast. The other one didn't careless about the stuff in my room, he came to me, touched my locks and sniffed them. It's the creepiest thing i have ever seen.

I closed my eyes trying to get my head back to reality, to what was happening! I am being robbed. "Asivaye Joe" said the other guy that was collecting my stuff in a big sports bag. The one on my bed just rose his forth finger telling the other to wait. "We have everything we came here for" the other guy reasoned. "not at all, you have no idea how much i have been waiting for this day." the creepy guy replied. The other guy gave up and said he didn't come for "this" and he is not interested, he then stormed out of the room saying he will wait in the car and watch the coast.

"Now it's just you and me Mellisa, i guess now you see me" the creepy guy said after the other one had left. I inhaled, trying to think only then i came to the world of living. I looked the guy, he looked at me and smiled. " you are the most beautiful girl i have ever seen Mellisa but you've never noticed me. Do you know how much that hurt?" he said, cupping my face. I kept quiet.

"Do you know how much that hurt? Loving someone from a distance? Someone who doesn't see you even when you are smiling right in front of them ready to be their shining armour? Huh? " he shouted, i kept quiet still. "Now you can't talk?" he added and pushed me down on the bed, he strangled me, shouting "die" with a devil look in his eyes! I had to think fast, i reached my hand on the table next to my bed! I closed my eyes and concentrated all my mind on my hand, on what was on the table, my hand came across a pen. By this time my head was exploding, i took the pen on the table and stuck it on his neck and took it out so that he could bleed. shocked, he let go of my neck and held his, i managed to kick him to the floor, i was coughing uncontrollable. When i tried to run out of the room, as weak as he was he tried to grab me by my leg as if killing me was the most important thing in the world that he would waste his last breath doing; i turned around and kicked him on the face and on the neck repeatedly! He slowly gave in, i watched him taking his last breath, i knelt beside him, trying to feel a pulse in his wrist and there was none. My hands were covered in blood, my pink sleeping shirt was something i could

recognise. What have i done? I thought to my self.... "mfethu yonk' into ingrand" my thoughts were disturbed by the other guy that was waiting in the car, walking to the room. I knew it was going to get really ugly, i panicked and reached to the knife in the jacket of the dead guy. I stood behind the door and waited, as soon as the other guy entered, i attacked him without thinking twice, i stabbed him till he looked like an old fadukhwe. I couldnt stop myself. After a long time i got off him, sat on the floor with a knife on my hand, my body covered with blood. I looked at the intruders, 'it was a self defence Lisa' i thought just to make myself feel better. 'it was a self defence' i said those words over and over again in my head, after a while i got up and walked to their car to look for my phone so i could call the police. I notice that the door is perfectly opened, i wondered how did they do it! Did they have a key? Or they just watch too much television. On my way from the front door to the car, i felt my bones breaking, at first it was a knee, then an ankle, an arm, all of a sudden... all of them! Everything got brighter and redish! I could see hair growing on my skin, i felt tooth growing in my mouth, i witnessed claws growing! All this time i was on the ground screaming, then i blacked out.

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 2

That night changed my life.

I woke up in hospital, when i opened my eyes my house mate was in the room. "She is awake", she shouted then a doctor entered with papers in his hands. When i tried to move i noticed that my hands were cuffed on the sides of the bed. "Relax Lisa, how are you feeling?" said the doctor pushing me to the bed. "Confused, whats going on?" i asked with a very confused face as i noticed that there were cops standing by the door. "You look perfect, all tests came perfect. A detective is going to be with you soon" the doctor replied after checking my eyes, ears and mouth. I looked at Nicki, she looked scared and troubled. "I called your parents." she said without looking at me. I wished i could scream and ask why i was cuffed, why i was in hospital, why my house mate wouldnt look me in the eyes! Why there were police watching me but i just didnt have it in me! "What am i doing here Nicki, whats going on?" i finally found my tongue and asked.

"You dont remember?" she asked with a puzzled face.

"Remember what?"

"You killed two men without messy Melisa, two men! In our house, now you are telling me you dont remember..." right after that we were interrupted by a man who introduced himself as Detective King. The doctor signed papers that i was stable, i was perfectly fine. Then i was escorted by 3 police men to the Van, taking me to the police station for questioning. On the way to the police station i started to remember, the events of that Friday night came back in flashes,

then the whole thing played in my head. The sides of my head were like singing 'kikiki', my gums started hurting! "Are you okay? Whats wrong with your eyes" one of the cops i was in the back of the van with asked, instead of answering i buried my face in my hands. I got lost in my mind trying to calm myself down.... everything was louder, even the engine of the car was making noise than usual. I was brought back to life when i was told to get out of the van, we were already in the station. When i got in the station, i scanned my eyes around. The receptionist was chewing a gum and i could hear it perfectly, i could hear her heart beat... the was a man who was writing something on the paper, i heard the movement of the paper, when i concentrate i was able to see what he was writing on the paper. I could smell things that i shouldnt be smelling . Like all my senses were sharpened. What was happening to me. Before going to the interrogation room i asked to go to the bathroom. A female cop accompanied me. When i got to the bathroom i washed my face and looked myself in the mirror . 'what happened that night MJ was self defence. Those men came into your house and attacked you. They deserved every pain they felt' i consoled self.

Strange enough, i was not paying much attention to what was happening to my body, i thought maybe i was hallucinating . The centre of my attention was the men i killed. The first one was self defence and i felt a part of me dying a little when i watched him taking his last breath. Well, the second one was another story, i felt no remorse at all. I loved the smell of his blood, i enjoyed tearing him apart and that scared me a lot. It was most definitely the anger, i was scared. even the stupid justice of this country can see that i acted like a frightened victim and regarding the situation, my actions were justified.

After a while the police told me to pull myself together my lawyer was already here.

Before heading to the interrogation room, my lawyer asked to talk to me in private, i told him the was nothing to worry about, i want this over with so there was no need for private talks. I stated my name and my statement on the tape. I said exactly what happened. "I blacked out, the last thing i remember before waking up in hospital: i was going to their car to get my phone then I, I, I dont know what happened. I fell" i said closing my statement and shrugged. I didnt know if telling them about the claws, bone breaks, my eyes and the smells was a good idea but i decided to keep quiet for it was not relevant.

"Explain to me how exactly did you kill these men? What was going on in your mind?" King said putting disgusting pictures of the dead men on the table, expecting some reaction from my side but i was cold. I remained still.

"I have already told you how i killed them Sir, i stubbed this one with a pen and this one with a knife, the only thing in my mind was to save my life." replied.

"Have you ever killed before? It looks like you enjoyed what you were doing, like you have done it before" he continued.

"That's enough, my client isn't going to answer anymore question nor will she be manipulated." my lawyer jumped in and answered. After watching my lawyer going back and forth with the detective, i was let free, told not to leave town as more tests needed to be done regarding my mental stability. I tried not to be insulted by the way the case was handled. It was like the were the victims, i was the perpetrator where in reality it was the other way round , pity i beat them in their own game. Is this how self defence is treated these days or its because i am nt Oscar?

When i get out of the station, my family was waiting for me. I hugged them, from my father, mother, Kwanda and Onke. I assured them that i was okay, they looked stressed especial my father. Joys of being the only girl. Everyone felt my pain even more than me. "Y'all dont need to worry about me. I am fine i swear." i said, trying to laugh.

"You were almost killed MJ, you killed two men, you were found outside your house naked. Now you are treated like a killer ngathi uwasukele lamadoda! You have every right not to be fine, to be upset, to break dishes, to scream. Its okay to be sad, its not being weak its being human." said my mother holding my hand. "Thanks mom but i swear im fine." i assured her. By this time we were in the car, driving to town. My family decided to stay in Jozi for the weekend to make sure i was okay. When we got to their hotel, my clothes were already there. My mother told me i was going to move in res bla bla bla.

Later on my father asked me to take a walk with him. I also needed it, i needed to clear my head. We walked down the street, all the way he was quiet till we came acrovss a park. We sat on the bench and stared in the sky. After a long time he looked at me and said ; " you turned didn't you?" i wasnt sure of what he was talking about, i looked at him and asked what he meant.... "you activated the curse Melisa, the James' dont kill!!! You activated it" he said looking deep in my eyes, i looked back at him and saw hatred.

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 3

"What curse?"

"Its too late to explain now, i never thought this would happen in this generation, to my child!" he exclaimed.

"What are you talking about dad? It was self defence tata! I was attacked, what should i have done? Huh" i said harshly.

Before he could respond his phone rang. It was my mother. I could hear every single word even though he answered the phone far away from me. "John she is just a child, our child. Dont do

this. Come back home and lets talk this through." my mother said with a pleading voice. "Was our child, she is a monster now. A werewolf, killing will be her second nature. We have to kill one to save many." my father responded.

"Please John, she is our only girl. Our little girl."

"Nokwanda we swore to kill every werewolf alive, you know what these animals are capable of or should i remind you of how they killed the entire village including your family and my mother's side of the family? Do you want me to remind you what your family stood for? You were meant to be a hunter mama ka Kwanda" he stated.

"And yet i married a man from a werewolf blood line."

"You know i didnt take my father's family curse. My mother was strong, she dominated my father thats why i never turned. I dont understand how Melisa turned."

"Dont dont a fool John, how can you not understand? Just because you didnt take the curse it was not a guarantee that your children will not take it. Come home with our daughter alive. We will see what to do." my mother concluded then she dropped the phone. When my father turned around i was right behind him, the shock in his face!! Priceless. "Dont ever do that again okay?" he shouted.

"You know i heard everything right?" i said with my hands in my pockets.

"I suppose so" my father responded. "We should go back to the hotel" he added.

"So you and mom can decide whether to kill me or not, i dont think so. We are going to sit here and you are going to tell me about the curse, about werewolves, about hunters, about your family and my mothers family" i said leading him to the bench where we were seated.

"I am so sorry Melisa" he seated.

"Everything dad, tell me everything"

"Its a curse upon James family. The minute you kill with your bare hands, the curse is activated. I never told you this because i didnt think i have to. I killed but i didnt turn. My mother was strong, he dominated my father. I dont know what to say, maybe its because she was a priest. I dont know. nevertheless my mother died, animal attack they said. My father have children from other women, make them kill so that they can turn. He was building an army of werewolves. When i didnt turn, i was the disappointment. They took me to the woods and told me to run as fast as i could. They hunted me down like an animal. Thats when i met your mother's family-hunters. They knew the bush in and out . It was a war. I watched my father preying on the innocent. Your mother lost her family but we survived. She taught me everything her family taught her, we hunted down my family. We killed them. But they had already turned the entire village into wolves. Your mother and i had to flee, find more humans to train to be werewolf

hunters. After a decade we went back to my village and killed every living super natural. We killed all of them. There is no good in wolves, they prey in the innocent, your only desire will be to kill. Nothing is above them except of silver. The first man you killed was self defence but you attacked the second guy and you couldnt stop yourself right? You enjoyed it didnt you? you understand why i have to drive a silver knife through your heart right?" tears escaped his eyes.

"You say i am going to kill again?"

"Yes angel, i am sorry you inherited the curse"

" so i am the only werewolf alive?" i asked still processing this confusing information

"As far as i know. We havent come across werewolf in 30 years. We should go back to the hotel. Say goodbye to your brothers"

We walked back to the hotel. He told me about how werewolf arent supposed to be among people, how they are against nature and that they are animals. In his presentation he didnt mention that werewolves are faster than a human being could ever be, stronger, they can heal themselves. They can see , smell and hear this from a distance. They can take other people's pain, which means they can heal people. Being a wolf is either a gift or a curse. Its a curse if you go around turning people. Its a gift if you go around helping people. He said i will kill i wont be able to resist the desire of killing people. What if i can? What if i can learn to control myself. On our way to the hotel he made pretty sure to preach about the fullmoon. "During the full moon you will turn, you will hear every bone in your body break. Its painful. I wouldnt want my princess to go through that." my father said but i wasnt ready to die. I was only 20.

When we got to the hotel my mother and my two brothers were already waiting for us. "I brought them up to speed" my mother said. My brothers knew, i saw the way they looked at me. It was different.

"You were right John, we cant let the past repeat it self. We cant let her live. She is no longer our daughter. She is a she wolf"

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 4

My mother said every word with passion. She meant it from the deepest place in her heart. I just stood there like an idiot. Everything was happening too fast, my life was changing too fast. My mother stood there with a bag in her hand then she opened it, there were ropes in the bag, a gun and silver bullets. I didnt even attempt to run away for i couldnt believe what was happening. My own parents wanted to kill me? It wasnt happening.

Onke: wait, what is that mom?

Mom: we are going to tie her up and take her home.

Onke: and the guns what are they for?

Kwanda: werent you listening O? Melisa cant live, she is a danger to the society!

Onke: what do you mean she cant live?

(By this time Onke was standing in front of me)

Onke: she is our sister Kwanda whats wrong with all of you?

Dad: she was, this is not the girl you grew up with.

Onke: dad?? I will pretend i didnt hear that. Dont you think this is your fault? Its your fault that we didnt know about our history, about the family curse, maybe if we had known, things wouldnt be this way.

Mom: Onke i explained this to you that your father didnt inherit the curse we thought none of our children will inherit it. And we never thought you would kill.

Me: i was attacked mom, what should i have done, y'all were going to feel better if i was killed or raped? Kwanda?

Kwanda: im sorry sister that things are now this way but abazali are right. Better one than many.

Onke: even if that one is your family? Your only sister? Your only daughter? The person you knew since forever? You taught us that family is everything, is this what you meant? You dont even want to give her a chance to see if she can control her self! You dont even wanna try! What about a benefit of a doubt? Huh?

Dad: stop Onke, giving her a chance is putting the rest of us in danger. I dont want that.

Onke: wait, wait if utata is immune to the curse we might create a cure with his blood!

Dad: dont get over your head son! We tried, there is none. This is witchcraft not science. Nokwanda tie her up.

All this time i was dead quiet, my mind was somewhere else. I was making sense of everything. I couldnt believe that my big brother wasnt on my side, that he thought i should be killed. My mother pushed Onke away and tied my hands together. The rope was burning my skin. "Im sorry sweetie, the rope has wolf spain" she whispered. Then she took the bag and head to the car. Kwanda held me by my arm and led me to the car. They put me at the back of the car and went back to the hotel. I was left alone. I tried to untie myself but i couldnt, every time i touch the rope



my hands burned. Still trapped in the car, a driver's door opened. It was Onke, he flashed a smile and winked at me. "What are you doing" i asked confused and relieved.

"You didnt think i was going to let them kill you did you?" he said starting the car.

On the way he told me he took the car keys while everybody was busy packing and locked their door outside.

"What now?" i asked.

"I dont know sister, lets drive home. Look at the study, see if we cant find anything that can help us. You are not alone MJ" he then pulled the car over and untied me. "Thank you O"

"You are my sister, i have to look out for you"

I smiled, a lump grew in my throat without noticing it, i was sobbing. O gave me an awkward hug as the car was small. "we have to get going sister bae" i broke the hug ad hit him on the shoulder. Everything he wanted to irritate me he called me 'sister bae'.

On the way he asked how i feel, how was i different now that i was a werewolf. I told him everything and usibhanxa found it fascinating except the urge to kill. "So sister bae you can hear things that no one else can hear? Isnt that awesome?" he asked.

"It would be if i wasnt breaking every bone in my body or my family didnt want to kill me"

"When you change do you became a wolf? Like an animal?"

"I dont know O, its only been a day. I cant know every thing. In less than 48 hours. I blacked out"

"I know, im sorry. We will figure this out; together"

After a long, i mean long drive. We got home. It was already dark. Every door was locked. Onke broke the window and got inside, i followed. His phone had been ringing but he was ignoring it.

"I think you should take that" i said, walking to the study room where my parents buried them selves most of the time. "Its umama, i dont have much to say to her." he replied behind me.

"Just take it O, hear what she has to say. Put her on speaker" onke did as i said. It was my father." Onke i know you think you are saving your sister but listen to me boy you are making a mistake. She is probably going to kill you kuqala! Where are you? Let me help her rest in peace. See, if you dont let me help you, tomorrow i will have all the police looking for you and when they find you, kuzokrakra" my father said on the other side of the line. "Are you done?" Onke asked.

"Onke listen to me son..."

"Are you done? I hope you will tell the cops that you want to kill your daughter" with that Onke cut the call. We looked at each other and shrugged. Then we started what we came for, we looked at the books in the study, looking for anything that talks about wolves or supernaturals. "I

think i found something" my brother shouted. "What is it" i asked.

"Our grand father's journal. We have to go. Abazali will be here in no time."

We took few clothes, lap top and money from the safe then we drove to town. When we got to town we abandoned the car and took a train to only God knows where. "Look sister bae" after a long time Onke gave me the journal he was reading. He looked me in the eyes while i was reading what he was showing me.

On the journal it was written that wolves live forever, the only way to kill them is by a silver in the heart. In history no wolf had been able to fight the desire to kill. One becomes a wolf by two things, they are born with it, like me or by a bite.

"You know we cant run forever, my parents are going to find us. They are hunters" Onke interrupted me.

"I know, we are going to figure something out." i replied still looking at the journal.

"You have to turn me sister. The only way to make it through this we have to be both supernatural. One bite then i will be stronger, faster and immortal. Its us against the world now. We have to be as strong as we can be"

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 5

"What? No O" I half shouted in shock. Who would want to be turned in to an animal.

"Sister bae this is the only way to survive. Together we are stronger think about it when we are both supernatural, faster, have special abilities. We would never have to run nor fear anything and anyone. This is the only answer, we can't try to survive and try to keep me alive at the same time." He reasoned, believing every word he uttered.

"I am not going to turn my brother into an animal, no bloody way"

"You don't have to do it now just think about it okay?"

I nodded, he went back on reading his journal and I continued reading mine. The stuff about werewolves is scary and yet fascinating. I read about how we can be killed and how similar we are to the vampires which made me wonder if they really exist. I wondered what does science say about this. Days ago I wouldn't have believed any of it but now there's nothing I can't believe. I shook my head as I thought about the weird conversation I just had with my brother. Who would wanna be turned into a wolf? To an animal? Are these special abilities really worth it? I honestly wished I was given a chance to choose. Things would be different now, I wouldn't be running around from my own parents trying to kill me. I wouldnt be in television and news papers. I would be bored in my house, I loved my boring life. Being an animal was never my wish,

how can I turn my brother to that,?

Time waited for no man, I and my brother in the train drawn to the journals, we spent the whole night not talking. The following day we got off on the train stop not far from a small town then we walked to town hoping to get something to eat. To think about it I spent the whole night in a light sweater but I wasn't cold not even a bit. I told this to my brother. "Being immune to cold must be one of the perks of being you know what." He said as we entered the shop to get something to eat. We both laughed and parted away ways in the shop. I went to the bakery side and he went to the cooked meal/ kitchen side. I picked a lot of cookies and a juice then I went to my brother. I met him on the way already running to me. "we have company." He said grabbing my arm and leading me to the other side of the store. But unfortunately we bumped on another tall guy. "where do you think you are going kids" the guy said grabbing both I and my brother by our necks. By this time the shop was closed down. "What do you want from us?" Onke asked.

"you both have no idea do you? You are worth 10 thousand rand as you are standing there. Rules are easy, when you see them call the cops you will get your reward upon their arrest. Whatever you have done kids you've got some people pissed" said a guy behind the counter before flashing a newspaper on the table. Wow I had no idea, we made headlines. Our parents seemed determined. On the wall there's t.v... We made it to the news too. All that was said is our parents are looking for us who ever saw us should call the cops ASAP. we are a danger to ourselves and to the community at large.

My mind was crossed by the guy behind the counter talking to a phone. The only thought that overwhelmed all my senses was to tear him from limb to limp. I jumped over the counter, snatched the phone off his hand and redecorated the counter with his inner organs. I couldn't stop myself even when I saw he was not breathing. I was interrupted by my brothers heart beat, beating faster than normal. When I looked up the other guy had knife on Onke's neck. Onke was shaking and looking at me, I could smell fear from where I was standing. "isnt it too early for all this mess?" I asked walking towards them. He kept glancing on my hands, I also wondered what was so fascinating. When I looked at my nails, the claws were out, I was hairy but I was not a wolf, I was still on my feet.

"you dare come closer I will cut his neck" the guy holding my brother said, slowly moving next to the door.

"I will have your heart on my hands before you can utter another word. Release my brother and you will leave." I said slowly walking towards them. He pushed Onke to the floor and jumped to unlock the door, but I was super fast. I was already on the door, holding the handle... "not so fast" I said. The look in his face was priceless. "i picked up your scent, this didn't happen. One wrong move brother I will find you within a snap of a finger and you already know what I am capable of." I said, he nodded repeatedly as assurance. I let him go, my bother and I took what we came for, changed our clothes and both wore hoodies so that we can be invincible. We took a back door from the shop and walked because there was literally no car on the road. We

walked till we came across a park, we sat down, breathed and ate.

Me: you have been quiet.

Onke: I have been thinking.

Me: about?

Onke: our faces are all over the media, this was just a start. These attacks will keep coming Mellisa. Our parents will not stop until we are where they want us to be... Six feet under. I can't help but think what would have happened if that guy had guts to slit my throat.

Me: don't say that O, I would never let anything happen to you.

Onke: I know but you can't be fighting a giant guy and protect me at the same time.

Me: I know you are right, I'm just scared. You know I am new to this, I can't go around biting people. Especial you, you can't be my first.

Onke: everything is written in these journals sister bae, what's the worst that could happen?

Me: to change someone I have to bite them when I am a werewolf and I don't know how to turn. You are putting so much pressure on me bro, let's take it one step at a time, can we?

Onke: I'm sorry its just that mom and dad aren't taking it one step at a time. So far I don't have a dying wish just as much as I don't have a wish to bury you. All I am asking is enough power to be able to protect you baby sis. To be able to protect both of us

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert six

Later that night we slept in the woods. The debate about turning my brother was still on and I was getting convinced by a second. "Its a full moon tonight, you will turn" my brother said starting fire. "I read here that were-wolves are weakened by a full moon, they can't control their turning" he added.

"Yhea I read it, even the part that says I will break every bone in my body before turning. I don't understand why anyone would want that"

"Because there's only one full moon in a month, the rest of the month you be as strong as fuck. Oh by the way I have to tie you up because once you turn you will not have control of what you are doing, you will rip every last living creature in front of you." He said.

"Including you" I replied. He went on about how I will never hurt him. How even if I turn I will still be there, will still be me I just have to focus. "i can't take chances O." I said. As the clouds started to be clean and moon started to show up bit by bit I could feel the hit on my skill. I knew it was time, everything I read about werewolf and the full moon was about to be "on fleek". I couldn't take the risks of being around my brother whom I could hurt.

"MJ are you okay, your eyes are red" my brother shouted with a worried face. Then he got up and attempted to have a closer look on my eyes. I howled so loud that he fell on his bum and closed his ears. That wasn't intentional, I just wanted him not to come closer. I noticed I could harm my brother, for that reason I took a nearest stick and hit him so hard on the head, he fainted immediately. I then took a fleece blanket on our bag and covered him. I didn't want him to try and follow me.

I ran as fast as I could, as far as possible from my brother. But on the way of no where I fell as the moon showed up. I felt every bone in my body break. Its the worst experience in the world, the most unbearable pain a mankind should never go through. After a while I changed, completely. It was insanely unbelievable. As a wolf I could see even more clearer. I could smell people from the distance but this time their scent was different. I sense them like they are a part of me. I could feel them, then all of a sudden something out of the woods jumped and attacked me, I fought back. Then a bigger wolf showed up and howled, the one that attacked me stopped and looked terrified and apologetic . the big wolf slowly turned into a human being form. When I jumped at him, he held me like I'm nothing. He put me down and looked at me. "i am not going to hurt you I'm just going to send you to sleep okay. You cant be out in the woods during a full moon." Still processing what he murmured I felt being injected with something that weakened my muscles immediately.

On the following day I woke up covered in a small blanket. With 3 guys around me. They all looked puzzled. I looked around, it was a house made of stones. "where am i ?" i asked.

"where is my brother?" I added before they could respond to the first question.

Guy1: your brother is safe, he is sleeping.

Me: now get on to my first question. Where am I?

Guy2: we heard about the accident that happened at the shop yesterday morning then we tracked you down. How can you be that careless?

Guy1: for goodness sake you will get all us killed.

Me: you are not answering my question.

Guy3: please forgive my pack's rude behaviour, we are underground where no hunter will ever find us. People of our kind were wiped out decades ago, since then we have been living in secrete. With such attacks they will know we still exist, they will hunt us down and they will not

stop until they cut our heads off. Hi, my name is Pitter.

(He extended his hand for a hand shake. I swallowed my mini pride and met him half way.)

Me: hi, I am Mellisa.

Piter: this is Jake and this is Jack. (Jake and Jack raised their eyebrows as a sign of greeting) that's no way of greeting a lady.

Jake: hello Millisa, who are you? I thought we are the only one left.

Me: just as much as I thought I am the only one.

Jack: surprise.

Piter: what's your story Lisa? Were you bitten?

Me: why should I confide in you?

Pitter: seemingly you just turned. You have no idea of what you really are and what you are capable of. You have no clue of how to control it. We can help. We are family now.

Me: before family bond I would like to see my brother first and have proper clothes on.

(Jake threw me my sports bag. I took out a skinny jean and a t-shirt. They stared "seriously? I need to get dressed." I said. "dont be a drama Queen when we took you from the woods you were in a birth suit so it won't be something we haven't seen before." Jack said before winking at me, what a jack, his name suited him more than one could count. They didn't even attempt to leave the room, I was left with no choice but to get dressed in front of them. When I was done I heard Jack exclaiming; "utyiwe yintoni ke,?" I responded with a middle finger. He laughed and shook his head. Pitter took me to another "room" if you can call it that, when I got to the room my brother was fixing his sneaker laces. I cleared my throat, he looked up. "MJ" he yelled and came to hug me. "do that again, I will kill you myself" he said breaking the hug.

Onke: what is this place? How did I get here?

Pitter: hello my name is Pitter, I own this place, I am an alpha of the pack and I want to help your sister.

Onke: help my sister? Who said that she needs help? Sister bae is there something you wanna tell me?

Me: no but Pitter has a really nice theory. They are like me. Werewolves.

Onke: and you trust them? You forgot the part where it says we can't trust anyone.

Me: no trust me I haven't just as much as I haven't forgotten the part where I can't control my shape- shifting and my anger. Pitter can help.

Onke: can I talk to my sister, alone.

(He said looking at Pitter, "call me when you are done." Said Pitter. )

Me: come now Pitter we both know you will hear us. Werewolf extra hearing hello? I don't know much but I noticed. So brother just talk.

Onke: when a werewolf kills one of its kind it takes all the power of the dead one. You are not in his pack or bloodline why would he care..

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 7

"You suggest I want to kill your sister? Are you insane? For your information I didn't even know about the power transfer that you are talking about. Look bra, your sister might not be in my bloodline but we are one. She is one of us now –a werewolf and we protect each other not the opposite. If she accepts me as her alpha our powers will be combined, her, Jack, Jake and I will be one, together we will be stronger" Pitter reasoned with my brother. But the O I know wasn't buying any of it.

"Here you are safe Mellisa, I will teach you everything I know." Pitter added.

I didn't have anywhere to go, I didn't know how to control the shape-shifting. Whether I liked it or not I needed Pitter and his friends. Not only for survival; a basic need of all breathing species is sense of belonging. They all have went through what I am going through. They understand me better.

"does she? The last time I checked we were just fine without you." My brother protested.

Me: alright,I had enough. Quiet both of you please. (I yelled a little) Onke, we are staying.

Onke: sister bae.

Me: its not for discussion brother.

Pitter: you are making a right choice Mellisa.

Me: aaaa so just we are clear Pitter, I ain't bowing to anyone. I am not part of your pack. I am the only surviving werewolf in my bloodline ,that makes me an alpha. Understood?

(He nodded but I needed him to say it)

Me: I need to hear you saying it Pitter.

Pitter: I understand.

Me: (with a goofy smile) thank you.

The following weeks were the hardest. I learned self-control. To do that I had to turn over and over again, they chained me up like a crazy man and watched me break every bone in my body over and over again. Its nothing I have ever imagined. But at the end it was worth it. After that I could turn at my will, nothing controlled me, not anger nor full moon. I was in full control. Pitter taught me how to use my abilities. I became stronger everyday, faster but in control. As the time went by I became stronger than the team which didn't sit very well with Pitter. He felt threatened by my powers. I could do things that none of them could like healing an alpha (Pitter) bite in seconds , running 5km in seconds, not only hearing heart beats but differentiating their heartbeats. I could smell things from a very, very far distance. The team came in terms with who I was and what I was capable of but we didn't figure out how I was different from them.

I fell in love with who I am, no one could touch me, I started to log for what every person log for ; life. I couldn't stay in the bush any more but no one was for me, they were all against me. Reason being its safe to live underground, they wanted no trouble, they just wanted to survive but that was just not enough for me.

All this time ndi busy ne training my brother buried himself in our family's journals. Its all that kept him sane. He let go of trying to talk me into turning him or at least I thought so until one day when I came back from our normal morning routine, speeding in the woods with Jake and Jack. This time Pitter didn't join us claiming not to be in the mood.

On our way to our cripy underground hiding place. I smelt blood, I heard a heartbeat making a very soft sound, not only did I hear it but I felt it. I felt the pain. Within seconds I was in our cave, I found my brother on the ground, coughing black blood. "O, O!" I shouted his name as I knelt next to him. I held his head and put it on my lap, I held his hands and focused on taking away his pain but I couldn't, he just kept coughing.

"i am so sorry" I looked up, it was Pitter mumbling something.

"what have you done Pitter?" I asked without shifting my eyes from him.

"dont make me ask twice." I added aggressively.

"he wanted to fit in Mellisa, he begged for a bite"

"what? You bit my brother? Pitter what did you do?" I shouted. Even though I was mad but my anger wasn't strong enough to dilute the pain I saw my brother in. I tried to focus on being angry at Pitter but the pain to see my brother so weak, to hear his heart giving up was unbearable .  
"your blood"

My brother whispered but because of my werewolf advantages I heard him. I don't know what he meant but the only thing that came in my mind was to feed him my blood. I bit my wrist and fed him. He fell asleep almost immediately. I could feel his heart beat increasing. He was alive.



My blood healed him. Something was really wrong with me and my brother was the only one that could explain for he was the one always buried in our family's journals and he knew my blood could cure him.

Midday we were all by his sides waiting for him to wake up. The minute he opened his eyes, I looked at Pitter. "try that again I will rip your heart out while styling my dreadlocks. That's how easy it is." I said before getting water for my brother.

When I got back with the glass of water he was up and chatting like he wasn't dying hours ago. But I could feel sadness even though he tried to cover it up. The crew asked how did he know my blood could cure him. "lucky guess." He replied. His heartbeat went up and beat faster; he was lying which led me to think it was family business.

After an hour of bonding, the crew left to get food I got time to get my brother away from the cave, far away where the crew wouldn't hear us even when they come back.

"Its just the two of us now, in the middle of no where" I said. He hugged me.

"Alright thank you brother. What's up?" I said breaking the long emotional hug.

Him: from the journal I read something.

Me: I'm listening.

Him: you know why you can do things that no werewolf can?

Me: you know I don't.

Him: your genes little sister. You are a pure werewolf, its in your blood, you are not diluted like the bitten werewolves. You were born with werewolf genes. Not only are you the only true werewolf but you are the only and last.

Me: what do you mean?

Him: the curse was supposed to end with our father's generation. Their mistake was to ask a baby girl from the ancestors the curse was then passed to you as a sub consequence.

Me: (I sighed) what exactly are you saying Onke?

Him: you were not supposed to be born Mellisa. Werewolf blood ended with our father's generations which was all killed.

Me: then who wrote the journal that speaks about me because clearly that person knows about me. This doesn't make any sense.

Him: our father.

Me: you are kidding right? Father said he didn't turn because he was out of wedlock.

Him: that's true but he went to the same people he killed to ask for a baby girl which my mother always wanted all her life. That's how much he loved my mother.

Me: he knew the price.

Him: yes he just hoped you will never kill anyone. Reason why he wanted to put you down immediately, your powers will draw supernaturals. you will be the target because your blood is the answer to everything.

Me: why didn't you turn when Pitter bit you?

Him: our bloodline generation is immune to any kind of supernatural except for you of course.

Me: because I was not supposed to be born.

Him: Amen, now she sees the light.

Me: its a lot to process Onke.

Him: to summarize everything little sister; our parents, after having two children which is me and Kwanda they wanted a girl, the only plan my father could come up with was to go to his step-ancestors that includes his step father whom he thought was his father all his life, he asked for a baby girl. Our mother fell pregnant, indeed a beautiful baby girl was born, of course the baby girl was asked from werewolf ancestors she inherited the curse but his father crossed his fingers, praying his princess never trigger the curse by killing a human being. But parents can't protect their children from the evil of the universe. Tragic happened, the princess took a life and father's worst nightmares came to life. His princess turned in to what he calls a monster, he was backed in a corner where he was left with nothing but to kill his precious daughter. Because he loved her so much that he didn't want to see her breaking every bone in her body during every full moon, to see her chased by evil for her powers. Because of love he had to put an end to what he created ngenxa yothando.

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 08

What Onke told me was too much to process. Let alone to believe.

We went back to our hiding place, the pack was still not back from town. Ndazicenga ndake ndathi ukufunda ezi journals zika Onke. It was not fair that knew so much about who I am than I did.

Before I could finish a page the pack was back but with empty hands. "I thought you guys were

going to get food... I'm starving." I said carelessly.

"I think you and your brother should leave" Pitter said. I looked up at his face, half smiled thinking he was joking but he wasn't . even his heart beat was still. I could smell fear. It was a little confusing because he is the one who begged me to stay in the first place.

"what? What changed" I asked putting the journal down.

"hunters are looking for you. They are in town Mellisa. Its about time before they track you here. That man you killed in the shop weeks ago attracted them here in this town. Everyone who knows about us knows that guy was killed by a werewolf. You know when these guys come here they will kill all of us not just you who killed a man emini." Pitter said with his heart racing this time.

I stand and put my hand on his left side of the chest. "you are scared. I can hear your heart pounding. What's wrong?" I said, being a little sarcastic

Jake: wait, you can hear Alpha's heart beat? An omega shouldnt be able to do that.

Me: Im special Jake, you should know that by now. Now tell me what scared the shit out of you. Don't tell me its some human who call themselves werewolf hunters.

Pitter: you should be scared Lisa, they are not just hunters, they at supernaturals born to hunt and kill werewolves. At least the original hunters who recruited others.

Me: but still they are mortal, they are not as fast, they are not as strong.

Jack. Whatever.... The bottom line is they are looking specifically for you and your brother.

Onke: how do you know? Besides I'm not a werewolf.

Jack: I saw them, I noticed the wrist watch worn by the man who had your pictures, its legendarily . it was worn by the original hunters then passed to generations to generations. They are dangerous. They killed all the werewolves in history. You should be scared, its no time to play a hero

Me: wait a minute, they had my picture? Can I try something?

Jack: what?

Me: I don't know I just wanna see how far I can go.

Before he could reply I stood behind him,I put my left hand around to close his eyes and my right hand on top of his head. I closed my eyes and zoned out from where I was. Just like I imagined. I could see what he saw. It was like I was in his mind only that I was a third person. I see everything from far. My parents were in town, distributing pamphlets that had my face and Onke's. They promised who ever came forward with us will be rewarded -R300k. And I saw the pack urging about handing us over to the hunters and take the money. I was brought back to life

by someone shaking me and shouting my name. I opened my eyes a little. It was my brother. "MJ MJ are you okay" he shouted. I let go of Jack's head, I felt a little dizzy. "your nose is bleeding. What were you doing Mellisa?" Pitter said giving me a wet cloth.

I took the cloth and cleaned my nose. I left them there and go to get water. My brother followed.

"are you okay?" he asked.

"I'm fine" I said, then I went back to the crew.

Me: I was in his head.

Pitter: you were what?

Me: you heard me.

Jake: how is that possible? How is it that you are different from us? That you can do things that none of us can?

Me: thats old news Jake. What's important right now is that I was in Jack's head and I saw everything. What changed your mind about handing us to the hunters?

Pitter: we don't betray our own.

Me: I understand why you want me gone from your cave. Ndingumthwalo. I can take care of me and my brother. I know who the hunters are.

Pitter: you do?

Me: yhea, they are the ones we were running away from kwasekuqaleni.

Onke: you are kidding... Our parents?

Me: yhea, I saw them with my own eyes.

Pitter: fuck!! Your parents are hunters?

Me: yhea.

Jack: didn't you think that was important information?

Me: nope.

Jack: you are an ass.

Me: a delicious one.

Pitter: you both are making noise. You do know that right?

Me: next point. I have a plan.

Jake: listening

Me: I am incredible strong.

Jack: I think we all know that by now.

Me: khame sibhamxa! As I was saying I am strong now and in control. I know the danger I put you in by staying here. This is what is going to happen. You will take us to our parents, get the cash and get out. I will deal with them. Don't worry brother I'm not going to kill them. I'm just going to reason with them.

Pitter: that's a suicide mission Mellisa. Do you think hunters will reason with werewolves? The only language these people know when they see a werewolf is silver. They are going to terminate you before you can utter a word.

Me: I would like to put that in test. I feel you underestimate my powers. I can rip their hearts out in a blink of an eye before any of them could reach for a guy, bow arrow or knife. I am that fast. Now Jake take out the pamphlet you put in your back pocket, dial the number and tell them you have us....

Jake called the number on the pamphlet, it was my father. My father ordered Jake to tell him the address so that he could come and take us.

"i and my man have your children Sir, tell us where we are going to meet you. We are coming to you not the other way round." Jake said.

"You don't understand, my daughter is dangerous. She will kill you without blinking. Let us come to you." My father reasoned.

"so I have noticed. We have drugged them. We only have 30 minutes before they wake up. Text me your address and have that R300 000 ready."

With that Jake dropped the call.

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 9

My father sent Jake the address.

Jake: I have the address, let's go over this again. What's the plan?

Jack: we hand Melisa and his brother to the hunters, take the money and leave.

Pitter: this, this doesn't sit well with me... What if they kill you Lisa? How do you think the pack is going to live with that?

Me: hey, I told you. I am stronger. Besides if it happens. You are going to live like I never existed okay? No mourning. Otherwise ndizoporha!

Pitter: do you think this is funny?

Me: Geez, lighten up Pitter, will you?

Pitter: let's do this and get it done with.

Jack: it looks like someone caught feelings.

(They all laughed and looked at Pitter. He kept a straight face and looked at them with a disapproval look)

Me: come guys, he is your alpha you know you can't laugh when an Alpha doesn't get the joke.

(They laughed even more. This time I join them. Pitter showed a middle finger, we laughed still!  
U Alpha uyathuka!)

Pitter: moving to the next point. How exactly are we going to pull this.

Onke: it has to look believable. My parents know no human being can take MJ down. Wait, what if they notice you are werewolves?

Pitter: they can't unless we change.

Jake: or they throw tear gas...it makes our eyes glow.

Jake: I said we drugged you so we are going to put you at the back of our bakkie.

Me: let's do this.

(They tied me and my brother with thick rope then they put us at the back of a bakkie. Pitter was not please at all. He didn't see the point of this plan, of handing me to people who wanted to kill me. He didn't care about money but safety of the pack Jack and Jake started to want more. I was starting to get under their skin. They were starting to see that living in the cave is no life, what's the point of being a werewolf if your abilities can't protect you and help you get what you long for.

Pitter and the pack drove off with me and my brother at the back. Within few minutes they stopped. I had my eyes closed, pretending to be sleeping, drugged. But I was wide awake, I could hear everything. I heard seven different heart beats, the four must be my father and his fellow hunters. Jake asked about the money, but my father wanted to see me first. They opened the back of the bakkie. He touched my neck not sure what he was feeling. He then called other

hunters to take me and my brother to their car. My father gave Jake a sports bag, I heard Jake thanking him.

"Just one thing that is bothering me. How did you find them? How did you manage to drug a werewolf?" my mother asks.

Jack: a what?

Her: you know exactly what I am talking about. You are working together aren't you?

By this time I could hear the packs heart beating fast. I opened my eyes , we were in the middle of no where. I saw my mother throwing black ashes to Jack, his eyes glow and claws grow. In a blink of an eye my father took out his silver gun but he was late, I was faster. I already had my mother's neck in my hands. "hello daddy, pull the trigger I am breaking her neck then I will come to you and the other two hunters" I said with a smile in my face.

Dad.; Mellisa! Don't you dare. Let go of her or I swear to God. You can't kill all four of us.

Me: you have no idea of what I can do. Let the pack go, see? If these claws dig deeper in her throat she will turn. I am a pure werewolf and an Alpha daddy. I know who I am, I know what you did.

Dad: okay, okay. I get it. Your friends can go.

(I let go of my mother. Once Jake turned around to the car my father pulled the trigger but he missed. The other two hunters had their guns aiming at the rest of the pack but i already had my hands in their chests massaging their hearts. The look on my father's face was priceless. "you are the monster." Daddy whispered. All the pack, my parents and my brother looked at me with their eyes popped out and their mouths wide open. I pulled the hearts out of the hunter's chests. I held their bleeding hearts on my hands. I felt more powerful, I felt stronger. I then looked at everyone and dropped down the hearts accompanying my evil deeds that fulfilled my heart with a sigh of relief.

"next time you think of betraying me daddy. Remember this moment. Now, shall we?" I pointed them to their car.

Before they could gather their strength to get in the car, a black Bugatti stopped next to us. A white guy with orange lips, in black clothes came out of the car. He had a devil smile. He clapped his hands and said. "if its not the pure werewolf. Oh friend I believe you and I have a lot to discuss. But first things first. When a werewolf sees a hunter, it doesn't think twice. It does what's good for its kind. Kill it"

He broke my mother's neck and ripped my father's heart out. I heard Onke scream painfully. It happened so fast I couldn't even make a move. When I make my way to him with a single look

he gave me a massive headache. I felt it both sides, I knelt down screaming, he politely put his hands on his back and just looked at me without blinking. When the pack turned into werewolves and tried to stop him, he waved his hands. They all fell down just like that.

He blinked then the headache stopped.

“Now that I have your full attention, let’s talk. My name is Rick, I am a witch. You all kids are monsters but I am a bigger fish. Thing is; I am mortal. With a pure werewolf blood I can create an immortal spell. This is why I need you healthy and alive Mellisa James.”

What the fuck!!

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 10

Rick gave me a hand to help to get up. “Behave. Your friends and your brother will be okay I just sent them to sleep.” He said it so casual like it was nothing. Like he didn’t just kill both my parents. He took all the hunters including my parents and put them in their car. He took Onke and put him in Pitter's bakkie. He then gave me a hand and said; “let the journey of great monsters in the entire world begins.” He said with seductive eyes and goofy smile. “I won’t bite.” He added as he took my hand and led me to his car. I hesitated, he sighed and looked at me with his glowing eyes. “you and I are going to be a team Mellisa. You are going to walk to that car and I am going to drive away to my apartment.” He paused, then like he is in second thoughts he added: “you are coming with me whether you like it or not. You have seen a little of what I can do. Don’t push me.”

Me: or I just rip your heart out and watch you bleed.

Rick: I feel like I need to reintroduced myself here. Hi Mellisa, I am Rick, the most powerful witch in history. I can give you a massive headache with a single look. I can make your blood boil. I can stop the blood from moving in your veins. All in a single look, I just have to focus. I can keep your muscles still and make you walk to the car. With the power I have I can rip your claws off and you will kiss them good bye. So what is it going to be Mellisa. Are you going to walk to the car or should I make you?

(I gave him a dirty look and followed him. He shrugged his shoulders and looked at me like he was hoping for some hospitality. Before getting in the car he held my hand and told me to watch. We looked back to the hunter's car. He whispered “let it burn.” Three times then the car was on fire. Wow. That was impressive but I was in no mood of being impressed. He didn’t have to do



anything with his hands. He opened the car with hi eyes. And he always made sure I noticed each and every stunt he pulled. We got in the car and drove off.

“stop with the sulking, will you? I saved you the trouble of killing your own parents. I had to protect my investment Mellisa, get over it.” He said. Rick was the most self centred and arrogant person I had ever seen. We arrived in his house. Talking about heaven. He kept talking to me even though I was not responding. He assured me I was going to learn to love him in time. His house was clean just like him. He poured two glasses of scotch and gave one to me. “ I hope you are over 18.” He said. I took the glass and poured it in all at once.

Me: are you going to tell me what you really want with me or you'll keep talking AT me?

Rick: straight to business. My kind of woman. (He grinned)

Me: now, please.

Rick: like I told you Mellisa; your blood is the answer to everything. I have figured a way to make me immortal, to complete the spell I need your blood.

Me: is that all? You could have just asked.

Rick: excuse my manners.

(I bit my wrist and filled a glass that was on my hand with my blood.)

Me: there is my blood. I need to go to my brother.

Rick: (he looked down and smiled then he looked at me) that's not how it works Lisa. The spell can be done only during full moon.

Me: are you kidding me? Full moon is in three weeks!

Rick: if its your brother that you are worried about they must be awake now. I was going to say you can call him but you don't have a phone neither does he. But you are a pure werewolf, you can connect to your brother, feel what he feels.

Me: what do you mean?

Rick: oh little miss you think you know what you can do! You haven't seen half of it.

Me: and how do you know all of it? How do you even know about me?

Rick: I am a powerful witch.... I read about a pure werewolf but the hunters killed all of them. Then few months ago I started to have these weird dreams about you. the more you practised your powers the more they got clearer. Your power draw me here. I then contacted my elders and asked about you, indeed you are the answer to all my problems. You were not supposed to be born Mellisa. You are an abomination that will ruin the nation. You draw the evil. The are dangerous monsters out there longing for you, wanting to use you differently.... To make more werewolves, to make immortal spells, to cure diseases, who knows what else your blood can

do.

Me: and I supposed to believe everything you say, why?

Rick: Its the truth. Believe it or don't. Its totally up to you.

Me: you said I can connect to my brother. How?

Rick: I lied. I will call my sister to check on your brother.

(He said that so casual like its normal or its something that someone can be proud of. He made a call and the girl on the phone said the pack is okay, she gave a phone to my brother. We talked for a few minutes. I told him not to worry, I was okay even though I didn't trust Rick. I told my brother to go back home to Kwanda, to tell him what happened and how sorry I was. Lastly I asked him to do what he did best- reading. I couldn't trust anything from Rick's mouth. It had to be double checked by a trusted source, we had three weeks before the full moon. After an emotional phone call with my brother, Rick told me to choose a bedroom, bath and change to fresh clothes even if it meant wearing a gown. I hadn't bath the whole day and he couldn't stand that.

"Rick Rick Rick oh brother. Always a bully" a blonde girl said upon entering the sitting room where we were chilling.

"Please do forgive my brother. We grew up without parents. We picked manners on the street but I think he lost his." She added before drowning in a scotch. She looked just as mean.

Rick watsho wabobotheka luncumo. He smiled playing with a glass in his hand. "Mellisa, meet my old sister; Amanda." I faked a smile and looked at them.

"my my so this, this dark beauty with long dreadlocks is the dangerous pure werewolf that you have been dreaming about?" she said looking deep in my eyes.

"I must admit; I thought you were much prettier. Nevertheless nice to meet you." She said before shaking my hand.

"what are you?" I asked looking at Amanda.

"born a witch but I don't practice." She said.

"i have somewhere to go, you girls have fun." Said Rick looking at his wrist watch. Before exiting he stood by the door and brushed his thumb and middle finger together. Then he smiled to his sister. "you didn't have to Rick." Amanda shouted.

"i can't be too careful love." He said and bounced. I was left only with Amanda the whole evening. I asked her what Rick was doing. She told me he was sealing the room with a spell. We

were trapped till he decided to put it down.

“So you know, Rick is dangerous. Don’t trust him.” She warned me.

Me: you are a witch, why is your heart racing when talking about your brother? You are scared of him...why? Don’t you have the same powers?

Amanda: Rick ... He got obsessed with power. He killed thousands of people to have access to dark magic but to do that he had to borrow my powerS but I refused. One morning I woke up not able to even move a glass by my eyes. Every single power I had was gone. He took it, he didn’t even feel bad about it. He promised to give it back but still hasn’t. He says he doesn’t know the spell to give me my powers.

Me: wow!

Amanda: he is dangerous Mellisa. He is my brother and I love him. But I aint about “family first always and forever.” Rick has to be stopped. He already had messed up with balance of nature, abandoned our ancestors code of conduct. killed everything and everyone standing against him. He gets what he wants, he doesn’t care who gets hurt in the process. Like now, he wants to be immortal he doesn’t care that to complete the spell he has to drain every single drop of blood in your veins.

Me: the fuck.

Amanda: wow Of course he didnt tell you

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 11

So this is this the evil they meant. I wondered though; why was Amanda telling me this?

I asked her. “Because Mellisa we can’t let my brother do this.”

Me: are you going to turn against your brother now?

Amanda: family shouldn’t be a burden. Besides, you won’t be alive to tell the tail. I didn’t like you the second I entered that door. Those dreadlocks makes me wanna throw up.

(She threw a glass at me but I caught it. She tried to catch me but I was already across the room.)

Me: are you trying to kill me Amanda. You know you can’t take me on even with my eyes closed.

Amanda: wow! Unbelievable . Rick sealed the house you shouldnt be able to use your abilities.

Me: that's not what I asked. Are you trying to kill me Amanda.

Amanda: yes Mellisa I was trying to kill you because you are the problem, without you theres no immortality spell....but obviously I am an expired witch, I'm fragile I can't take you on. But I have a plan.

Me: you are just like your brother. How can you want to kill me and five seconds later think we can be a team.

Amanda: do you want a pity apology that I won't even mean? Come on now. Look, Rick is going to come back we have to work fast.

Me: there's no we Amanda (I shouted) what's in for you if I kill your brother?

Amanda: I am trying to save you here Mellisa. Stop being such a school girl and grow up. You are a werewolf now. The first thing in your mind should be survival not some lame stuff.

Me: what game are you playing Amanda?

Amanda: poor little thi...

(She was sitting on the couch. Before she could finish talking I did what I did to Jake. I got in her mind but this time I saw what she was thinking not previous events. I let go of her head, she stood up and screamed. "you were in my head Mellisa, wha...")

Me: if you could have just told me that when your brother dies you will get all your powers back but you can't be the one killing him because your ancestors would punish you for taking another wicche's life.

Amanda: how did you get in my head Mellisa, you shouldn't be able to do that .

Me: you would be surprise of what I can do.

Amanda: are you a witch? Do you have any history of witches in your family?

Me: no, let's stop talking about me. Back to you. Why didn't you tell me?

Amanda: it wasn't a matter of life or dead, I figured it was not important.

Me: I guess you are going to tell me what is.

Amanda: I'm bound to. Rick is going to kill you, I will never get my powers back. This is about saving your behind, getting my powers back is a bonus. Think Mellisa

Me: I would be damned if I let you have what you want. You are no better than Rick.

Amanda: don't be stupid Mellisa. Rick is a problem here. Look, he doesn't know you can use your abilities while the house is sealed. Use that to your advantage. Snap his neck while he is

not watching. But be warned my brother is always on his guts.

Me: if I do consider that. Be warned, I will kill you both.

( I said before taking off. I went up stairs and look at the bedrooms scanning for one that will suit me best. When I got to the 4th bedroom. It was locked. My curiosity grew. I took off the locker like its a piece of cake. They lied- They said I trigged a curse but this my darling is a gift. A privilege. When I opened the door I was welcomed by a smell of blood. I almost chocked on my breath when I saw what was inside. A beautiful family, laying still with no pulses. A mother was in a sexy lingerie, she had her head and right arm on top of her husband. Her husband was half naked. On the other side next to the husband there was a beautiful chubby baby girl who I estimated to be around 6-9 months old. They were all dead. There was no blood on the floor, the bedroom was just as clean as the rest of the house. On the wall the was a big picture of the couple when they were pregnant. The husband is behind the wife, they are both holding wife's huge belly. It was beautiful. It remained me of the photo my parents took when they were pregnant of me. Such beautiful family shouldn't die in the hands of supernaturals, not in this shame.

I put back the lock and went down stairs to Amanda. She was watching t.v and sipping hot chocolate.)

Me: when is your brother coming back?

Amanda: I don't know.

Me: who are those people he killed upstairs?

Amanda: you shouldn't have seen that. If he finds out you saw them he will know you opened the door which means your powers are working. Now shut the hell up and go to take a bath.

Me: answer the question Amanda!

Amanda: they are the owners of this house. Rich folks. I told you, Rick takes what he wants when he wants. When he found out you were in the area, we needed a place to crash. He searched for the most beautiful house and killed the owners so that we can have a peace of mind. No Melissa don't look at me like that. I told you. He is evil and there's nothing I can do about it but to follow him everywhere he goes, hoping he will find it in his heart one day to give me back my powers. Or maybe someone will have balls and rip his bitter heart out.

(The door flipped opened, Rick made his famous entrance. Okay I must say it though. Rick was the hottest guy in the planet, he was about 1.7 tall, not buffy nor slim, perfect structure, neat hair cut, his black hair complemented his skill colour, he had brackets and walks to die for. He had shopping bags but they were smelling of herbs. He put them in the kitchen and came back to

where Amanda and I were sitting)

“my women.” He greeted before sitting down. “it looks like you two are hitting it off. Big sis don’t get attached to the she wolf, she won’t be here long. I told you that.” He said crossing his legs, taking a remote and changing television to another Chanel.

Me: what does that supposed to mean Rick?

Rick: didn’t I tell you? I hope you will forgive me Lisa, I have so much in my plate. It must have totally skipped my mind to inform you that to complete the spell I will need even the last drop of your blood.

Me: you mean it skipped your mind to tell me that you are going to kill me?

Rick: yes, I mean exactly that. Don’t worry, i will make it quick. Don’t give me that mean look baby. There’s nothing you can do about it. You are trapped in this house till the day of the full moon. Honestly, please do excuse my manners let me inform you while I still have it in my mind; you can’t do any werewolf juju in this house. No extra strength, no extra hearing, no magic speed...nothing pheww I literally call the shots. Now,get me a glass of scotch, will you?

Me: yes Sir.

I smiled a little before getting his glass of scotch. Amanda looked at me with a “i told you so” look. I looked at her and smiled to the side. I had to figure out a way to stop Rick but not give Amanda her powers back. She was just as ruthless as her little brother

[03/15, 22:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 12

I gave Rick his glass and sat down. He thanked me with his curvy smile. He took the glass, stared at it while spinning around the scotch in side... I heard Amanda sighing and saying; “please don’t pull that ‘drops of scotch in the air’ stunt, its old.”

Rick: don’t be jealous. Mellisa doesn’t know it.

Amanda: I’m sure she has no interest in witchcraft.

Rick: wow you too have really bonded, now you know what she has interest in and what she doesn’t. Fascinating.

Amanda: do you think she is here by her own will? I don’t recall she volunteering to give you all his blood.

Rick: she is immortal, she might survive.

Me: why do you wanna be immortal Rick? Who wants to live forever? People are born to die. That's nature.

Rick: who doesn't wanna live forever if there's a way? I have all the power in the universe, its dark and nasty. The only thing I'm scared of is death.

Me: there's no such thing is immortality though. Even I the pure werewolf can't live if my heart is ripped off or if my head is chopped off.

Rick: oh please, you can be shot at, stabbed, hit by a car, neck broken but you survive. You heal. Spare me the self- defence speech.

Me: if that's what you want why not turn to a werewolf?

Rick: and give up all these powers? ( he stood up and opened his arms with his hands turned up like he is waiting for something. "let it rain" he said that a couple of times, then there was wind. The main door and windows opened, rain poured like it had been waiting. There was thunderstorms. "pull it off" he said, just like that everything that was happening outside stopped. Door and windows closed right at that moment. )

Rick : a werewolf can't do that, in fact it can't even do the easiest thing like lighting cuddles or fire place. Your species are nothing compared to me.

Me: true. So what else do you need to complete thee spell?

Rick: just you, the rest is covered and its not for you to know.

Me: just out of curiosity what happens to witch's powers when it is turned into a werewolf?

Rick: nothing but your body gets dominated by werewolf blood so you can't practice. Thank God we are here in my house, I was about to think you are getting ideas!

Amanda: don't you think its time to give my powers back little brother?

Rick: why do you have to spoil it? We were having so much fun.

Amanda: please Rick.

Rick: I am your brother Amanda, I protect you. What do you need magic for?

Amanda: I am a witch too Rick, I want to practice just as much.

Rick: once the spell is complete I will give you your powers.

( this was it. The only way to stop Rick and not give Amanda what she wanted was to turn him into a werewolf. For Amanda to get her powers back Rick had to die or they had to be given to her in peace. Rick went upstairs . amanda got up and came to sit next to me. "you have to kill Rick tonight." She said. I nodded. I went upstairs, when I got to the corridor Rick was heading to the fourth bedroom and he was going to see that the lock was broken. I called his name, he

turned around and looked at me. "what?"

Me: I have seen your powers, I have seen what you can do but I have been wondering...

Rick: (he walked towards me, his eyes glowed) what have been wondering little she wolf. (He said seductively)

Me: can you take off my clothes with your eyes?

Rick: with my eyes?

Me: yes with your eyes.

Me: piece of cake...

(Magic. He unzipped my jacket with his eyes and unbuttoned my shirt just like that. He pushed me against the wall by just one look and stripped my jeans off. He flipped his hand like Queen Elizabeth, I turned and faced the wall against my will. He then came behind me and locked our hands together. He came close to my face, smelled my face then turned me around to look at him. He used his right hand to push my dreadlocks back. "theres absolutely nothing I can't do" he whispered to my ear. Perfect time for a bite. I bit him with my werewolf tooth on the shoulder, my claws dag in his back. He screamed and pulled off. "Bitch" he shouted. Amanda ran upstairs to check what was going on. "she bit me. How is that even possible,the house is sealed" he said before giving me headache, broke the joints of my body in one shout. After a few minutes of agony. It was his turn. His eyes turned orange, the witch juju he was pulling stopped. "what did you do?" he shouted looking at his breaking legs,hands, arms. He fell down and screamed like a bitch.

"whats are you doing to him?" Amanda asked, worried.

"Mellisa no,no you are not turning him to a werewolf. What about my powers?" he asked.

" how does that feels?" I asked.

Amanda ran out side, i had to stop her. I got to the main door before she did. "going somewhere." I asked. She gave me the most dirty look. I took her upstairs and locked her in her bedroom. "once your brother finishes his transformation he will be just fine" I assured her.

When I got to the corridor,Rick was completely turned into a wolf. He jumped at me but I howled, then ran to a corner and turned into a human form. I went to his room and got him a gown. "here" I gave him the gown.

Rick: what did you do to me?

Me: I turned you while you were busy showing off. Now go get some sleep.

I went to Amanda and asked her to drive me to my brother. The seal was down. We were no



longer trapped.

Amanda: you stabbed me in the back, why would I wanna help you?

Me: cause if you don't I will rip your heart off... In 5, 4\_3\_2

Amanda: wait! Sies you are worse than my evil but now a werewolf brother. There's an easy way. Your friends are werewolves right? You stayed with them for months. You guys bonded plus you are a pure werewolf and an alpha.

Me: is that the reason why I shouldn't kill you?

Amanda: wow,! Go out side. Howl. They will hear you and find their way here by morning.

Me: how do you know that?

Amanda: I have been in the supernatural world for a while sweetie.

(I looked at her blonde face and shook my head. I locked the door out side. I got on the roof and howled. Then I sat down looking at the beautiful houses, hoping what Amanda said was true. I would see my brother in the morning. "hey." a deep voice stuttered me. I stood up and looked around. It was Rick. "hey its in the middle of the night, what are you doing here?" I asked,a bit disturbed.

Him: "You called."

[03/16, 10:19] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 13

Rick and I went back to the house. He was excited about new werewolf tricks. He didn't question me which was very confusing. He did exactly what I ask him to do. I went to the room I picked up and sat on the bed. I couldn't close my eyes, the thought of my brother was all I have on my mind. I hoped to see him in the morning. I sat there thinking about how fast my life changed. One minute I had perfect life; by perfect I mean normal life. I was a university student, renting out an okay house, I was mommy's and daddy's little princess then the next minute I was on the run, the very same mommy and daddy wanted to kill me. I lived in a cage, before I knew it I was the most powerful werewolf who can read people's minds. My parents were killed by a witch that I just turned into a werewolf. Nothing made sense anymore. I needed my brother. I needed Onke. Though I could heal, though I was immortal but I was still fragile to emotional pain. I hugged my knees and cried my eyes out. How could my life change so much in a blink of an eye? I wished things would be normal again. I missed my family.

I don't know when I fell asleep. I was woken up by a terrific knock on the main door downstairs. I woke up, fully clothed and went downstairs to open the door. In my surprised it was Onke and the pack. The shock in their faces when they saw me opening the door was just priceless. They said they were not sure about the house but they heard me howling last night and got in the car right at that time.

"how are you sister bae" said Onke when we finally got time to exchange greetings.

Me: I'm okay, how are you,?( I said with a smile)

Piter: wait, where is that guy who killed the hunters?

Me: you mean who killed my parents.

Pitter: I'm so sorry about that. No matter what the situation was but they were still your parents. Where is he?

Jake: what did he want with you?

Jack: are you guys friends now that's why you have time for howling and calling us here?

Me: (I sighed) so what question should I answer first?

Onke: just tell us everything.

Me: right. His name is Rick, according to him he was the most powerful witch in history, the only thing he was scared of is death then he figured out an immortality spell. A spell that required every single drop of a pure werewolf blood. That's why he abducted me. But the spell could be performed only during fullmoon. He as impulsive and careless thinking he is the most powerful, feared and smart person in the planet. That's where I saw an opportunity to bite him and turn him into a werewolf. They said you can't be a werewolf and witch at the same time. So now is a werewolf and is not a threat any more.

Onke: you turned someone? Now you have a pack! Go alpha. (He laughed sarcastically)

Me: hay Onke.

Onke: am I not allowed to be proud of my little sister?

Me: hey I called you here to tell me more about this situation. You are the supernatural master.

Onke: hahaha dude I am human remember?

Pitter: well, he is going to be your bitch till the next full moon. You gave him speed, extra hearing, and sorts. He will thank you for that but next fullmoon he will turn and figure you have given him

a curse that breaks his bones every month. Then the real way he felt about you will all come back.

Me: we will teach him how not to turn during fullmoon, how to control it just like you taught me.

Pitter: that will be like making him hate you sooner.

Onke: not entirely, on the journals it says that a pure werewolf can't shed blood of its own pack and its own pack can't kill their alpha.

Me: what does that mean?

Onke: it means you can't kill Rick and he can't kill you unless you/ he gets someone else to do it.

Me: what happens if I do?

Onke: I don't know, it just says you can't.

Pitter: I have heard the story. A bloodwolf which is also known as pure werewolf can't turn someone and also kill them.

Me: what happens if I do?,

Jack: there's only one why to find out.

Me: how?

Jack: kill Rick.

Onke: no ways. What if she dies?

Jack: Mellisa is immortal. That means he will never die.

(Rick was in the kitchen making something to eat. When I got in , He looked at me and greeted. I greeted back and walked towards him. "whats that look? What's wrong" he asked not looking at me. "nothing, your heartbeat is just annoying" I said reaching for his heart to tear it out but I got headache, I heard unbearable noise, I took my hand out of his chest and fell down. The noise was like a ringing bell. Isitsho kabuhlungu. Rick and Pitter took me to the lounge, my ears were bleeding black blood. I felt weak. After a few minutes I was back to my old self. "uu that was not pleasant at all." I said before getting off the couch. I heard Amanda screaming my name to open the door then I remembered that I locked it out side. I went upstairs to open for her, she threw the most poetic insults that made me blush in stead of sobbing. She followed me downstairs. I introduced her as an expired witch. She hated me and I loved it. "i hate you" we would say every chance he got. "i would be insulted if you didn't." I always said in response. )

Onke: guys we should leave. Its not safe here. Its in the open. Rick was only the beginning.

Mellisa you are the most wanted, evil is after you. Rick isn't the most powerful evil that will come for you. He was just the most cocky.

Me: wait, wait something is coming. Its dark. We have to go now.

Amanda: my brother and I are not going anywhere with you. This is not our fight.

Rick: no her fight is my fight. We are a family now.

(We all looked at each other. I stopped myself from laughing aloud. Did he really say that? )

Amanda: the fuck Rick. Remember our mission when we came here? You were supposed to kill Mellisa and give my powers back bra! Now you wanna go and get me killed?

Rick: I am sorry sister this is our reality now.

Amanda: you are a selfish burstad. I have been by your side since I was ten when our parents died. I have supported you in your most daring decision. I have been nothing but good to you but you,you Rick repaid me by taking my powers without my consent now you are going in a war leaving me unprotected. You are siding with the enemy. Why do I even bother. It has always been your way or the high way. ...wait, did you all hear that?,

(The ground moved. We nodded. We stood up and looked at each other. We went to peep through the window, it wasn't windy, other houses were not shaking. Tables, chairs, started to fall down, the floor cracked. Then I heard a voice saying. "Hello Mellisa James I know you can hear me. To save everyone in that house simple come out alone or else I will be sad and when I am sad I control the ground. I will burry you alive."

What the fuck?

[03/16, 10:26] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 14

I looked around and not see anyone. "Guys its getting worse we have to get out of here"  
Amanda said, terrified.

Onke: what are you looking for MJ?

Me: someone is here he is talking to me. Pitter can you hear him?

Pitter: no I can't. What is he saying?

Me: he knows I can hear him and is the one causing an earthquake.

Amanda: oh my God, someone is causing this? What does he want? We gonna die, I don't wanna

die. Rick, Rick, I don't wanna die.

Rick: shut up sister please. Mellisa what does the person want?

Me: (by this time it was worse. The floor was cracking) he wants me. (I say heading to the door)

Onke: MJ don't. Don't you dare leave.

Me: its the only way brother.

Onke: there has to be another way sis, there has to be. You know he is going to kill you.

Me: if I don't go to him he is going to kill all of us, better one than seven. Besides I can take care of myself. Ask Rick.

(I opened the door and said "i am coming just stop whatever you are doing okay?" I walked towards the gate, the shaking stopped. When I was closer to the gate I saw a guy leaning on the big black car, he then came to open the gate for me. "you must be Mellisa James. Its such an honour to finally meet you." He said and took my hand and kissed it.

Me: I am a celebrity these days. Who are you?

Him: a man who is going to help you survive. (He leaded me to the car)

Me: a name would be nice.

Him: here (he opened a car for me, once I got in he got in on the other side of the car) I am so sorry about the introduction. My powers are the only measures i use to make sure I am heard loud and clear. (He drove off)

Me: apparently I am that thing that everyone wants. Wena what's your deal? My blood? My inner organs? What?

Him: no, no dear. You are right you are that thing that everyone wants and I am that person that has to make sure that no one gets you.

Me: haha what? You mean you are going to protect me?

Him: yes.

Me: what's in for you?

Him: survival. Rumour has it that with your blood mixed with your brother's blood my kind can be cured, our rivals have figure it out. So I am going to keep you safe to prevent that from happening.

Me: you are speaking Greek.

Him: my name is Nicholas, my pack is my family. We have special powers, we can move the earth. Its nothing serious really but people feel threatened by something they don't know. They

think we are an abomination we need to be fixed. That's where you come in. Their spell didn't work in the past because no body was immune to supernatural 'virus' someone like your brothers.

Me: then why didnt you take my brother as well?

Nic: he is useless without you. You are the bigger fish.

Me: so you are all about keeping me "safe"?

Nic: yes.

Me: who exactly is busy about curing you? I don't see humans being involved with such.

Nic: you will be surprised how curious and dangerous humans can be. We are here.

(He stopped the car and we got off. When we got to the house it was a normal household. Everyone was warm and welcoming in a most creepy way. I was just not comfortable. Uboya bam bungalali tu. There were about 8 people in the house. The youngest looked a little older than me. Nic was an alpha, they all looked up to him. There was no need for me to be introduced, they all already knew me by heart. I asked what their species is called but they said they don't know. Its only in the family. They suspect something like what my parents did was also done by their forefathers. In the evening a boy younger than me came back wearing school uniform. He called Nicholas "daddy" and they looked alike big time.)

Nic: Josh what happened. ( Ni asked Josh looking at his dirty school uniform. Everyone looked worried and angry at the same time)

Sarah: you lost control again, didn't you Josh, didn't you? (She shouted)

Josh: he made me angry okay?

Nic: Josh what did you do?

Josh: he made me angry, he called me a creepy loner. I accidentally buried him.

Nic: did any one see you when this happened.

Josh: I don't think so

Sarah: Lord,Josh you can't go around burying people when they make you angry, how many times do I have to tell you that for you to get it in your thick skull?

Nic: easy Sarah.

Sarah: he 16 he supposed to know better.

Josh: I am sorry mom.

(When he is about to go to another room he notices m and stops)

Josh: is, is this her? (He asked with a smile)

Nic: that's rude. But yes that's Mellisa, Lisa this is my last born Josh.

(I waved my hand. He winked at me)

Nic: now go change your school uniform and join us for dinner.

(In 15 minutes the table was set. Sarah and the 3 girls cooked. Bayitsho yamnyama itafile. We all got seated around the round table. They all looked beautiful and normal for people who can make an earthquake. )

Nic: I want to make a toast. A toast to the new member of the family, Mellisa James. Thank you for being here. With you by our side our lives will never be the same. We will defeat every enemy. In return we promise to keep you safe, we will protect you from all those who wish to cause you harm. We will fight them with our last breathe. To Mellisa...

Everyone: to Mellisa.

(They rose their empty wine glasses)

Nic: Mellisa each member of our family have to drink your blood. It will take just a second honey.

Me: there is a catch. I knew it. What exactly are you going to gain from drinking my blood.

Nic: when we drink your blood we get stronger. Your blood is like a booster.

Me: you are going to turn.

Nic: not if we have a witch who knows the right spell.

Me: a witch?

Sarah: yes dear. I believe you have met my arrogant nephew; Rick.

Me: you are Rick's aunt? Why aren't you with them? Other witches?

Sarah: its a long story but to cut it short. My late sister; Marry- their mother and I didn't get along. She didn't like Nicholas believing he is evil and that I chose Nic over family drove her nuts. I killed her; well Nic did it but it was my idea. It was a fight- he hit first I just hit harder, Rick and his sister were very young. I made sure they forgot about me and what happened to their mother.

Me: that's just disturbing. Now who exactly are you running from? The ones that want to kill you?

Sarah: old hunters. We have been running from them for a very long time. Now they are working with a witch, I have dreamt about it. They have figured out the way of stopping us... Mixing you

and your brother's blood. Its about time before they find us, you and your brother. Josh here isn't making it easy for us to hide. The earthquakes he causes raise questions.

Me: is that the reason why you need to be stopped?

Nic: they are scared of what we might do when we get our hands on you and decide to fight back.

Josh: daddy said if we drink your blood everyday, in a week we could take down cities all at once.

Me: what?! Why would you do that?

Nic: to accept us they have to fear us. Now how about that drink.

(I tried to get up. "you, sit" Sarah said I sat down against my will. By pointing her finger the palm of my hand was cut and I bled. They took turns on taking my blood in their glasses. When they were done Sarah stopped forcing me on a chair. My palm healed. She closed her eyes and made noise like she was praying in tongues . she then broke a stick that was in front of her. "its done" she said.

Josh: here comes the fun part. Thank you MJ.

[03/16, 10:26] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 15

I felt weak for a while. When everyone was done eating , Sarah cleaned the table and they all sat around the table like before. Nicholas asked Josh to get me a glass of water it will help the healing process to speed up. I drank the water and gave the glass back to Josh who took it to the kitchen and came back and sat next to me. "How are you feeling?" Nic asked looking at me. I smiled a little and looked back at him with my murderous eyes. I lean on the table pretending to be still weak. "MJ, are you okay?" Nic asked, worried.

"she is immortal love, she will live forever. Her body regenerates what ever seems to be dysfunctional. She will be just fine." Sarah said with so much confidence. I closed my eyes and laughed a little, they had no idea what they invited to their home. I looked at little Josh who was sitting next to me, my eyes changed, I felt claws growing. He opened his mouth when seeing my devil eyes, I reached for his chest before a scream could come out of his mouth. I held his 16 year old heart, I felt it pounding. I sighed in the most sarcastic manner. I saw Sarah calling in her witch juju...



"careful now, one twist he is dead." I said.

"Sarah calm down. Everyone just calm down. There is a little miss understanding here."

Their father said, making empty promises just to make them feel safe. By this time Josh was against the wall, I had my right hand in his chest, tears were trickling down his cheeks. I realised I was in a bad position because I couldn't see everyone, without removing my hand from Josh's chest I took him and put him on the table. Everyone was sitting still as the father promised that everything was going to be just fine.

"So where were we? Oh yes! You were drinking my blood without my consent. You were preaching about ... 'to accept you, they have to fear you.' Crap! You are using me to gain power so you can burry the country! Oh yhea? Is that it? What is it that you want from me you people?" I shouted.

Nic: "Mellisa you don't wanna do this! You don't want to hurt a child"

Me: who told you that? I am a werewolf, a pure werewolf, my basic need is to kill. Give me one reason why I shouldn't twist my hand.

Nic: we will never drink your blood. Never again. Because that is what you are against of. But we will still protect you. In order to protect us we have to protect you. What's hard to comprehend on that?

Me: I'm sorry Nick, I think to respect you they have to fear you. When I am done with Josh y'all will know what I am capable of. Sarah will never pull that shit on me ever again.

Sarah: I am sorry Mellisa. I shouldn't have forced you. I'm so sorry. Please let him go.

Me: good. At least now everything is set straight. We know who is more powerful. When I take out my hand from his chest I expect you to do nothing because if you misbehave I going to seek an opportunity like this and kill at least half of your family. (I then took out my hand from his chest. He finally caught his breath. His siblings took him to another room for first aid.

Nicolas: that as unnecessary MJ.

Me: but it was fun wasn't it?

(I choked on my words. I coughed , Nicholas shouted to Sarah to stop. She stopped.)

Sarah: give me one reason why I shouldn't finish her right now, right here? If you don't boost your powers with her blood then we are all better off efile! If she is dead then the hunters will lose their upper hand, the will be no cure for your powers. It will save us trouble.

Nic: you do know that she is immortal right?

Sarah: but I can stop her blood from moving, she will be as good as dead.

Nic: but you will do nothing of that kind.

Sarah: you choose power over your family?! Wow!

Nic: not now Sarah.

[Sarah rolled her eyes and went to Josh]

Nic: nice come back. I guess I deserved it after the stunt I pulled earlier.

Me: thank you Sir, I'm glad you noticed.

Nic: MJ we are not enemies.

Me: if you drink my blood without my permission; yes we are. If you want to kill innocent people damn right we are enemies.

Nic: that was lack of words from my side and I apologise. I'm sorry.

Me: right. Please take me home now.

Nic: we can't do that. I know you miss your brother. That's why I am going to get him before we sleep.

Me: excuse me ?

Nic: you have to be protected Mellisa. You cant understand that now but soon, you'll understand. If you stay here with us you will not have to live in the woods, you will live a normal life. Just be careful with your powers.

Me: why would you do that? Why would you keep us safe?

Nic: cause you are our end and\ or our beginning. I have been explaining this.

Me: why should I trust you?

Nic: if I wanted to kill you, I would have. No one is truly immortal Mellisa, my wife is a very powerful witch. How about you go upstairs, 3rd door in your left, that will be your bedroom. Mean while I go to get your brother. Soon this will feel like home. We are on the same side, we all fight the same hunters. When they come we will be ready.

[He brushed my hand before taking his car keys and went out of the house. I went to the room where they had Josh. When I entered the room I literally felt their eyes stabbing me all over. I leaned on the door frame and looked at them. I smiled a little and shrugged my shoulders]

Me: FYI i am not allergic to cow's eyes. (They kept quiet and stared still) Gosh! Are you going to sit there and give me filthy stares or are you going to ask me to heal your Josh? (Their facial expression changed.) Wait, wait, wait. You didn't know? I am a pure werewolf and an alpha. I can heal every wound. All you have to do is to ask.

Sarah: ask? You did this to him (she shouted)

Me: so?

Sarah: oh Lord you are so arrogant. I don't know why my husband won't let me break every bone in your body.

Me: oh sweet Sarah is that your best? I thought you are a powerful witch.

Sarah: how about this, boiling your blood. Burn you alive.

Rose: mom please this is not the time for a show off okay? Josh is dying. Mellisa, people; heal my brother.

Me: it will be my pleasure.

[I walked to Josh, I held his hand to take his pain away and fed him my blood to heal his wound. He then fell asleep... I looked at all of them and said;

"don't mention it. We are even now. No, Scratch that, we are so not even because I healed your beloved Josh."

Rose: thank you so much MJ.

Me: you are most welcome Rose, you too Sarah. Now I will need to bath, I will need clothes, pyjamas, toiletries. Mommy dearest how about you show me the bathroom and the rest? Oh I would prefer Jessy's clothes.... It looks like she is the only one who wouldn't be arrested by fashion police.

Sarah: you don't have to be mean to my children.

Me: I know right. Its just one of those things.

(I winked at her. She shook her head and went upstairs, I follow her. She gave me new towels and sleeping gown. When I was about to take them he gave me the famous witch's look. I saw lightning, headache from both sides threw me down, my nose bled. Sarah knelt next to me. "Look 'sweety' this is my home, I call the shots. Don't come here and act God okay? Okay?" she said. I nodded. "say it" she added.

"Alright, I get it ma'am." I shouted.

"good. Now take your towels, I will run you a hot bubble bath while you are changing. I'm glad you and I are on the same page now. These are my kids,no body touches them. No body." After that she left to the bath room. I breathed out in relief. This Sarah witch could be a real bitch at times. Reason why I hated magic so much. It was one thing that made me weak. I took off my clothes and wrapped around a towel. Sarah called me to the bathroom. She told me the water was ready. I looked at her before climbing in the bath tab, she shrugged, giving me a questioning

look.

“You not serious, are you? You don’t think I will bath in your presence!! (She busted in laughter) I’m serious witch mama, how do I trust you not going to drown me in the tub? Damn I don’t even trust if you haven’t put your witch jujus in the water. You know what? I have changed my mind. I am not going to take a bath. I’m going to take a shower, witch”

She laughed so hard and said; “you are hilarious kid! Hahaha a ‘pure werewolf’ has trust issues. It looks like you know your place now.”

She winked before closing the door behind her.

#she is back with love

[03/16, 10:29] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 16

When we grow up we plan out our lives perfectly. After high school its university, graduate, get a fancy job, buy a car, fall in love, get married, buy a house, have kids and live happily ever after; exactly in that order. Who would have guessed that today I would be taking a hot shower in a stranger’s house who have powers to control earth! That today I would be calling myself a pure werewolf? But I always knew I was special, I only went to university because its a norm, I never wanted a good life. I wanted something phenomenal , breath taking, challenging, secretive and freaky. Something like being an assassin, undercover cop or government secret agent! Who do you know that is one of the above three things? None, thats the life I fantasied about, an artistic life. Being a werewolf isn’t far from it.

After what felt like forever I got out of the shower and wore my sleeping gown, when I was going to my room I heard a familiar voice! No bloody way! Onke? I ran down stairs, the minute my brother saw me he ran to me, picked me up and told me how happy he was to see me. “are you okay, did they hurt you?” he said with a concerned face, putting me down. Lol the way he asked its like if they hurt me there is something he would do. “no, I’m fine. I missed you too O.” I replied and hugged him again.

“we are here you know.” A husky voice said, I looked at who was talking. It was Pitter.

“if you need a hug, you’ll have to ask” I said with a little but genuine smile on my face. I had

grown fond of the pack, Jack and Jake included even though they didn't seem to like me much. We were family after all.

"nha I think I will pass. If you ever need anything you know where to find us." He tried to be cool.

Me: I know its what you long for.

(I let go of my brother's hand and hug the rest of the pack.)

Jack: walk us out.

Me: its midnight.

Jack: perfect time for werewolves to run around.

Nicholas: I told them they don't have to live. They can live tomorrow.

Piter: and we thanked you for the offer but we won't stay.

Me: alright then I'm going to walk you out.

[I walked them out along with my brother.]

Pitter: do you wanna explain to us what the fuck is going on Mellisa?

Me: watch your tongue please. I'm the only one allowed to use strong language.

Pitter: answer the question Mellisa. What do you want with these people? What did they promise you?

Me: nothing, they promised me nothing. I figured this is my chance to live a normal life.

Jack: what is normal about these people, he tried to kill us.

Me: I haven't forgotten about that. Yes they are not normal but at least they have a life, the kid is attending school, others have jobs, they are living like normal people not like freaks who stay in the bush. This is better than what we have. I don't trust them, I won't let my gut down.

Jake: when shit hits the fan don't call us.

Me: if I don't call my family who do you think I'm going to call?

Pitter: (he smiled a little) your family? Look, be careful okay? (He brushed my cheek)

Me: pinky swear. Wait, where is Rick and his sister.

Pitter: we left them at the house. Why?

Me: just asking. Take care guys.

Pack: always.

[ they left. My brother and I went back to the house. I made him something to eat. Everyone was already sleeping except us. When he as done eating we went to my bedroom. He slept on the couch. I slept on the bed. In the morning we were woken by Sarah telling us breakfast was ready. She gave my brother toiletries and clothes saying they are her sons' ... I went to Jessy's room. "about the clothes I told you about." I said.

Jessy: you weren't serious, were you?

Me: dead serous. Do you think I'm going to eat in pyjamas?

Jessy: whatever. I will see what I can find for you.

Me: no thanks, I prefer doing that my self. ( I headed to her closet)

Jessy: have you always been a bitch or its the werewolf gene?

Me: umm I don't know. But I think I have always been one since I was born with werewolf genes. Anywho,what do you do for a living?

Jessy: why do you care ? Its none of your business.

Me: I'm trying not to be bitch. But it looks like Mellisa the bitch turns you on.

Jessy: sies maan Lisa!

Me: hahaha how can I know.

Jessy: mxm voetsek! That's just disgusting. I'm a waitress at Something good restaurant.

Me: aren't they looking for people to help out?

Jessy: what? You want to work?

Me: that's what normal people do. If they aren't in school they go to work.

Jessy: hahha alright I will talk to my manager. But only if you promise to behave. No werewolf stunts.

Me: whats that? Are werewolf real?

(We both laughed. I liked Jessy, she was full of life and looked like a total bitch. Unlike her sister, Rose who looked like umama wasenkonzweni. Rose was too formal and too serious for my like. When I was done dressing Jessy and I went downstairs to the kitchen)

Me: morning everyone.

Nic: someone looks happy. Did you have a good sleep?

Me: yes thank you for asking Sir. O, how are you.

Onke: I'm okay. I don't know the last time I sat around the table like this.

Me: yhea that.... before I became this monster that my parents loathed.

Onke: that's not what I meant.

Me: I know.

Nic: I'm sorry. This is your family now. Soon it will feel like home.

Sarah: Josh you are going to be late.

Josh: Im leaving mom. O don't forget your promise.

Onke: okay buddy.

Sarah: take your lunch box and remember 'no accidentally burry kids at school' okay? Okay?

Josh: okay mom I got it. I apologised for yesterday's incident.

Nic: okay Buddy, have a nice day.

(Everyone said their good byes to little Josh. They then prepared for work. Nic was working at a mechanic garage. Rose was a manager at Spar. Sarah was cooking for those who had lives to go to. I don't know where the brothers worked. Everyone was surprised that I got along with Jessy because they perceived me as a 100% bitch.)

Me: I'm not comfortable with leaving my brother with you witch mama.

Sarah: hahaha I'm starting to think you like me you know.

Me: you know the drill. You touch even a hair on my brother's head. Josh's heart will be your dinner.

Sarah: come now she wolf. Are we still there? Making threats?

Me: I'm just making sure.

Sarah: point taken. Your brother will be just fine. It would be a sin to touch a defenceless soul like your brother. It would be unholy of me.

Me: like you are ever holly.

Sarah: enjoy your first day at work. That's if you get the job.

Me: don't forget I dont like salty food. Bye witch mama.

Jessy: bye mom.

Sarah: I will keep that in mind. Bye kids.

(Jessy was driving a old red city golf. We got to her work with a blink of an eye. Fortunately they needed someone so I didn't have to use my werewolf powers to get hired. It was a long day, smiling and serving people. It felt normal and a little fun. Maybe normal isn't that bad after all. But deep down I know there's nothing about me. My life was still breath taking, when someone entered I held my breath and crossed fingers that its not one of the hunters or some guy who needed my blood for weird reasons. Even though I was in contact with the out side world my life was still fascinating, risk taking, challenging and secretive. I loved it. One day down without using my powers. I made tips of R500, that was good for a first day. Later that day, when I got home Onke was playing play station with Josh. We ate, I spent the rest of the evening on the roof smoking weed with Jessy.

I'm sorry for disappearing ..... Mellisa was on vacation. She wasn't talking to me.

[03/16, 10:31] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 17

I went to bed around 10. When I got to my bedroom I found my brother laying on my bed reading a book. "O"

Onke: sis bae. (He put down the book he was reading and sat up straight.) How was work?

Me: it was okay, nothing out of the ordinary. I guess that's a good of thing.

Onke: for how long are you planning to stay with these people.

Me: I haven't figured it out. Why? Found anything interesting on the journals about them? (I threw myself next to my brother)

Onke: wait, have you been smoking weed? What's wrong with you?

Me: have you ever tried it?

Onke: come on MJ you can't lose focus bra.

Me: no, I'm focused I'm okay. I pinky swear. (He clicked his tongue ) okay okay I won't do it again. Now tell me what have you found?



Onke: what's the point if you are not going to remember it tomorrow.

Me: I smoked, but I'm not high. Shut the front door!!

Onke: how did our parents die?

Me: are you serious?

Onke: its the only way to check if you are in your right senses.

Me: they were killed by a bad witch,Rick whom I turned into a werewolf. My parents wanted to kill me but that's not how I remember them. They loved me once, they would have killed for me, I was once their princess. That's how I choose to remember mom and dad.

Onke: I'm sorry this happened to you. I'm never leaving your side. That I swear on my life. Come here. ( he layed next to me, I rested my head on his shoulder)

Me: what did you find about this family?

Onke: there's not much about the earthquake makers. But I know they are not family . they need your blood to boost their powers. Other than that we are dead meat because when our blood is mixed it can take their powers.

Me: they told me.

Onke: and you don't find that problematic ?

Me: no but my gut is not down. We had a chat phezolo. We all know where we stand. There are hunters out there who are looking for us, to use us to stop Nicholas that's why he is 'protecting' us.

Onke: I don't see the end game here. Sizohlala apha de kuthini MJ?

Me: trust me on this, I have thought about it. Nicholas needs me for his powers. Now he is buying my trust, but the only way to let my walls down is if my brother is safe which is why they haven't killed you. This place is protected with a spell. It was a matter of time before the hunters find us, they are working with a witch. Rick found us so did Nic which means we are easy to find. The hunters have no reason to keep us alive, their entire existence is to kill us. We can't stand with them, the minute they find us they will suck us dry. My body will regenerate but wena you will be gone. ... Dead gone if you know what I mean.

Onke: (shook her head) you are using Nic, here we are protected. When the hunters come, there will be more than one head in our side.

Me: its a fair game, he thinks he is using me. This is a better army to join, with them we have chances to win. Witches are powerful, I'm nothing compared to them. Sarah is a witch. It will be a fair fight.

Onke: right. Now I see the light. Have you made any friends at work.

Me: lol no its only been one day brother.

Onke: jessy is a freak.

Me: haha I don't know about that.

(We chat till midnight. In the morning Jessy woke me up . we got ready for work. Sarah gave me a bracelet saying it has a protection spell, it will protect me from location spell. As much as I didnt trust the witch mama but I liked to believe she was honest. Nic needed me, he was obsessed with power and scared of what was coming. They needed me alive and healthy. To do that they had to keep me and my brother safe. My brother also got a ring with a protection spell. On the way to work I heard Jessy saying;

Jessy: is it true that you can plant thoughts in people's head?

Me: why?

Jessy: just curious.

Me: yhea, apparently.

Jessy: and you can read minds.

Me: sort of but it needs concentration .

Jessy: I need a favour.

Me: shoot.

Jessy: I want to know what Gift thinks about me. Get in his head.

Me: hahaha Gift our manager?

Jessy: yes will you do it. Please.

Me: no ways. You made me promise I will not use my supernatural powers .

Jessy: just this tiny favour sis Bae.

Me: yew don't call me that.

Jessy: your brother calls you that all the time.

Me: you are not my brother.

Jessy: okay. Will you do it for me.... Friend. What's the point of having all these powers if you are

not going to help a sister find out what her crush thinks about her.

Me: haha right. I will do it.

(When we got to the restaurant we changed to our uniform. We worked till 13:00 our lunch time which I found perfect to pay Gift a visit. )

“Sir”

Gift: Jessy's cousin right? Please come in.

Me: thank you.

Gift: is everything alright?

Me: yhea yhea I just needed to ask you something.

Gift: anything. How can I help?

Me: do you like Jessy, yhea in a romantically manner.

(After the bomb question I concentrated to his eyes trying to get in his head but I couldnt. It was like something was shutting me out. “what are you doing?” he asked. “are you okay. Why would you ask me that? Your eyes, your eyes are red.” He added and stood up in shock. I ran to him and held his head but still I couldn’t get in his head. The more I tried my noise started bleeding. He looked shocked and terrified. He had to be some kind of supernatural but he didn’t know. Before I could come to my senses I fell down. He ran out and came back with Jessy. “what happened to her?” Jessy asked touching my forehead.

“i don’t know. Her eyes... Her eyes were red.” He said.

“Get her a glass of water she will be fine. MJ what happened.” Jessy asked after Gift left.

“i tried getting in his head but something pushed me out.” I explained.

Jessy: has that ever happened before?

Me: only if someone is part of a powerful supernatural specie.

“here. How is she?” Gift came back with a glass of water.

Jessy: thanks ... She will be fine.

Gift: what just happened Jessy? Why were her eyes on fire?

Me: what are you talking about?

Gift: whats wrong with you?

Jessy: I'm sorry Gift, forget everything. I'm gonna take my sister home if that's okay with ya.

Gift: I need answers.

Me: I wear red contact lances to scare people. Are you happy now that you know my secret?

Gift: then why did your nose bleed?

Me: I forgot to take my BP treatment and I didn't eat in the morning cause we were late for work. These were the consequences. I'm sorry I scared you.

Gift: why did you ask if I like Jessy?

Me: it was a prank.

Gift: I would feel much better if this can be your last day at work.

Jessy: that's not fair. We need this job.

Gift: go home. Come after two days. I need sometime to think.

Jessy: thank you.

(I picked myself up and walked out of the office with my checks down to my neck....disappointed. Jessy walked behind me. We went to the staff room and changed to our clothes. No body said a word. We got out of the restaurant and went to her car. Only then we breathed. We drove off.)

Jessy: what just happened?

Me: your crush is supernatural but I don't think he knows.

Jessy: what is he?

Me: I don't know.

Jessy: for sure my mother can help him figure out who he is.

Me: no, let's leave him alone. He is Gift, manager at Something good restaurant, that's enough. Knowing he is a freak will change his life and its dangerous.

Jessy: right. I hope he hires us back in two days.

Me: you wanna go back?

Jessy: yep, don't you?

Me: (I shrugged) I don't know.

When we got home Rick and Amanda were there. Waiting for me.

Me: you look like crap.

Rick: hello to you too.

Me: what are you doing here?

Sarah: the hunters have found us. Thanks to you Mellisa. They didn't even need a location spell.

Me: what do you mean?

Sarah: you did something at your work.... Something out of the ordinary.

Me: is that how they found us?

Sarah: just like we are trying to keep a low profile they are also doing the same which is why its vital to stay on the rules. When Nic and I say no use of powers in the outside world we mean it. We know exactly what we are talking about. But oh no you are a pure werewolf people have to know you just had to try to get into someone's head. And you were kicked out. You know why? He is a hunter, you just handed us all in his hands with a silver platter. (She shouted)

Jessy: oh my God. Gift is a hunter that's why you couldn't get in his head. He tricked us. He sent us home so that he can know where we stay. Its only a matter of time. I'm so sorry mom. I asked MJ to get in his head.

Me: this is not the time for apologies. Its time to make a plan. They are coming. I can smell them. I let my gut down with Gift, thinking he was harmless, I should have picked up his heart beat but I didn't even listen to it. FUCK!

[03/16, 13:03] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 18

"You can literally smell them?" Josh asked with his eyes wide open.

"No, not this time. It was an expression." I said.

Sarah: so you don't smell them but you can smell them.

Me: that's the other way of putting it. Where is Nic?

Nic: I'm here. I was in the basement.

Me: wait,,,, why is your heart pounding. What are you hiding?

Nic: don't be ridiculous. Its not pounding because I'm hiding something but because I fear what's to come. I fear for my family.

Rick: something is not right Mellisa. We should go. This is not our fight. The hunters are coming for them not you.

Sarah: don't be a fool Rick. We are in this mess because your alpha can't contain herself. She likes to prey.

Rick: how do you know my name? I didn't tell you my name neither did Mellisa.

Sarah: (watsho waqhwanyaza uSarah. Her mouth went dry) MJ told us your name before you got here.

Rick: (he stared at Sarah) do we know each other from somewhere? Now that I'm looking at you you look really familiar.

Sarah: no son. I don't believe so.

Rose: dad, what now? Are we going to just sit here and wait for the hunters to cut our heads off?

Nic: I'm thinking.

Jessy: why can't we pack our bags and leave?

Sarah: we are safer here than on the road. Mellisa its time.

Me: for.

Nic: if we want to survive this war. We need to be stronger.

Me: you need my blood. We talked about this.

Onke: excuse me folks, can I have a word with my sister please, in private.

( Onke took my hand and leaded me upstairs. He shut the door behind us.)

Me: okay, I'm officially freaked. What's wrong?

Onke: come on Millisa, think about it. The only reason we are alive was to buy your trust but now shit hit the fan too soon. If you refuse to give them your blood they will force you. Magic! Once they force you, they will suck you dry, grow stronger, take on cities at once and they will have no

reason to keep me alive. I am what makes them vulnerable. Without me there will be no spell to rip off their powers. MJ are you listening to me?

Me: I'm thinking ....

Onke: they are not family. I know you are a super werewolf but Sarah is an old witch. And she is not as reckless as Rick .

Me: thanks for the vote of confidence brother.

Onke: I'm serious MJ.

Me: I know. I see your point.

Onke: can Rick hear us?

Me: no, there's a spell that breaks werewolf hearing in this house. They were scared I would eardrop.

Onke: they are going to kill me MJ.

Me: it makes sense. That's what Nic was hiding.

Onke: what are we going to do?

Me: okay O..... We get the hell out of here.

Onke: I think I have a plan though....

Me: yhea?

Onke: give back Rick his magic.

Me: what? Are you insane? The first thing he will do is to kill me. Rick the witch is ruthless. How can I even do that.

Onke: I read that the first person you turn is your bitch. Their first instinct is to serve you . I read that when a witch is turned into a werewolf they don't stop being witches but their blood is dominated by werewolf blood that's why they can't practise magic but a pure werewolf can cure him, if he is cured he will lose some werewolf abilities like hearing, growing claws or even super speed but he will still answer to you.

Me: I would be telling a raw lie If I say I understand.

Onke: OK little sister.... Think of Rick's blood as rain water –clean, that's witch blood. Then in this clean water you pour fusion, in this case fusion is werewolf blood. The water will be sweet

and the colour will change..... Fusion dominates water..... Werewolf blood dominates witch blood..... If you want the mix to go to its nature you get a pure werewolf to heal the person. He will go back to being a witch but your witch because a fusion was there and you can't get rid of it all. The water will never be as clean as it was before.

Me: but bra did you have to use fusion to present my blood?

Onke: haha does it matter?

Me: lets pray this works.

Onke: I know it will work.

Me: Oh and I have a surprise for Rick. Looks like I'm his healer in all kinds of ways.

(I left my brother in the room and went to take Rick.)

Nic: what is taking you this long?

Me: family business China. I am sure you know about that hence your witch mama blocked my hearing. Its family business that you didn't want me to hear right. Rick I need to talk to you.

Sarah: can't you all talk here?

Me: private family business.

Nic: make it quick. We have a plan.

Me: it will take only a minute. Besides I will hear when the hunters come. Its still clear.

(Rick and I went to my brother)

Rick: MJ I have a bad feeling about these people.

Me: I know, that's why you are here.

Rick: why?

Me: in order to survive we need Rick the most powerful and ruthless witch.

Rick: what do you mean?

Me: I'm gonna give you your powers back and your lost memory. Do you trust me?



Rick: always and forever.

Me: good.

(I bit my wrist and told him to feed. He didn't hesitate. He held on to my arm till it hurts, I told him to stop. I had to pull him off he then apologised for hurting me, I told him it was okay. I held his head and got in to his mind. I saw a broken soul who constantly felt empty like something was missing but couldn't figure out what was missing. I gave him the missing part in his puzzle. I filled the void in his heart. I gave him purpose. I woke the evil in him but calmed the anger. He was all mine. All of him. When it was all done, Onke gave him a cloth to wipe blood on his mouth.)

Me.: (I knelt before him and cupped his face) how are you feeling?

Rick: complete and grateful. Thank you Mellisa.

Me: you are welcome. Always and forever.

Rick: everything is crystal clear now. Sarah is my aunt. She got my mother killed .I remember everything.

Me: I'm sorry. But please stay focus.

Rick: always

Me: and forever.

Onke: let's go downstairs now. Shall we?

(Rick and I stood up. He used his hand to open the door. He then looked at me and smiled. I smiled back. Onke rolled his eyes and shot her head by his fingers...its what we do when one is bored to death. When we got down stairs they were all seated around the table. Rick and I sat next to each other. He kept looking at Sarah, I pinched his hip, he looked at me. I gave him a disapproving look. He then stopped looking at her. )

Nic: this is what is going to happen and its not up for discussion. Mellisa will give us her blood because its the only way to give us the power we need to defeat our enemy. You are family now and family help each other. Onke will be kept safe where no one will find him. He will be protected by a very powerful spell.

Me: it sounds like a one sided plan.

Nic: I told you its not up for discussion.

Rick: look mate, everything that involves Mellisa is up for discussion. You are planning to hide her brother so that the hunters never find him and complete the cure. Are you nut? You are proudly saying you will drink Lisa's blood without her permission. No like seriously are you okay upstairs? Here is whats not up for discussion; above everything Mellisa wants to keep her brother safe. So I'm going to leave with him and your son, the younger one. Lisa I'm going to take your brother back to the pack, they know how to hide from the hunters trust me. Probably wondering what im going to do with your son... Well, let's call him a bargaining chip. You sip one drop of Lisa's blood I will not think twice to slit his throat. ....

Sarah:( she cut Rick short, she stood up) don't you dare tou....

(Rick gave Sarah the taste of her medicine. He used his fingers to shut her mouth and his eyes to sit her down. The shock in Amanda's face when she learned that her brother had his powers back was priceless.)

Rick: hello Aunt. I know but we will talk about it later. For now let's save the day. Shall we?

(The arrogant witch was back with a bang. Him and I are going to be untouchable and unstoppable. )

Please share the page. Invite your friends...

[03/16, 13:04] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 19

Rick took my brother back to the cave where the rest of the pack stays, along with Josh. I promised Onke to come to him as soon as this blew off. The hunters were not going to stop. You know what they say about enemies? If you have common enemies. Stand with one of them, keep them close. get your enemy to kill your other enemy then finish the line by killing the one you kept close. In this case, it was Nicholas, once we were done with the hunters I was coming for them with everything I had. With Rick by my side the future was crystal clear.

"How did you do it?" Amanda whispered to my ear. "how did I do what?" I replied calmly, helping Jessy to set up the table.

"you know exactly what I'm talking about." She held my arm violently and turned me around to face her.

"let go of my arm,you already know I won't say it twice." I whispered back to her. She let go of my arm, I then push her, she fell and started crying.

Jessy: she is not fucken crying is she?

Me: trust me she is.

Jessy: sies what the fuck is wrong with her.

Me: beat me.

Jessy: hey Mellisa.

Me: what's up?

Jessy: you know I'm sorry right.

Me: I assume.

Jessy: but you are not going to hurt Josh right? He is just a 16 year old kid and if you do my father will never forgive you.

Me: I wasn't counting on it.... In case you haven't noticed, your father doesn't scare me. About Josh its a good thing he is a kid, his death will not affect the country for he doesn't pay tax. (She looked at me with pity eyes, I rolled my eyes back) don't look at me like that. I told I'm quite a bitch.

Jessy: and here I thought....

Me: thought what? That you can get through to me? I do like you Jes there's something special about you. I can see it in your eyes, walk, the way you talk and dress . but honey that doesn't make you that one person who can get through to me.

Jessy: whatever dawg.

Me: hahaha do South African people really call their friends "dawg"?? Wow I give up, America is taking over not only our minds but our souls too.

(She looked at me like I was crazy. I blew her a kiss to make her even more furious. When we were done setting up the table, everyone got seated. They all looked like they were struck by lightening . everyone kept a straight face, it was a funny sight I tell you. Never show your enemy that you are scared or that they bruised your ego cause that only rises the hand they have over you. I was the only one smiling and had eyes running around the table. For the first time in the 3 days I lived here, Nic requested we do grace before eating. They said everyone should close

their eyes. But I didn't, I mean if they all had their eyes closed no one would see mine were wide opened. "Mellisa close your eyes and hold Max's hand" Sarah said. "how did you know my eyes aren't closed." I asked, amused. They all opened their eyes.

Max: Mellisa or whatever your name is, I'm done taking your bullshit. Since the day you arrived here you have been nothing but disrespectful towards my family. Enough is enough, are we clear? You got what you wanted, we will fight the hunters for you, you took my little brother to make sure we don't hurt you, you gave back Rick his lost memories to make sure he doesn't think twice to kill Josh or any of my family! Don't u have all you need? The least you can do is to sit the fuck down and let our family have grace in peace. This could be the last day we have supper together. Aren't you capable of respect? Are that damaged?

(I would be lying if i say he didn't bruise my ego but composure was needed. I silently got up and walked upstairs which surprised everyone. The MJ they thought they knew wasn't going to go down, not without a fight. "where do you think you are going? Come back here Mellisa." Nic shouted before I took the stairs. They all gave him disapproving faces.)

Me: this is the respect I'm capable of . I am not going to close my eyes while I know for sure I am not among family but enemies who only keep me alive for my blood. I'd rather see you coming than hearing about it so I'm going to leave you to whatever that you need to do.

Nic: sit down Mellisa. Nicholas family I know this is time of hardship, I know we are all angry and hurt ,you are probably angry at me for bringing Mellisa here. For inviting someone to tear our family apart, for that I'm very sorry. Things were not supposed to be like this. She was supposed to be family, to be on our side, to make us strong but the only thing she has succeeded on doing is to explore our weaknesses and to bring sadness into our family. For that reason Mellisa is not family, she ordered for Josh to be kidnapped. For all we know he could be dead right now. There's no proof he is alive. You already know our tradition. Life goes on with or without one member of the family but those who have caused us harm get punished accordingly. She used her powers on the outside world, for that reason Hunters found us. She didn't only end there she kidnapped Josh.

Max: for that she has to be punished.

(Right at this time my mouth was dry, I was trying to get off the chair but I couldn't move a muscle. "Nic hasn't told you to get up has he?" Sarah said with a smug smile in her face.

"mom, mom what are you doing? This is all not her fault. You invited her to suck her blood. Things are now not going your way and you need someone to blame. I told you I'm the one asked her to use her powers, she had to take Josh to make sure this doesn't happen, you don't hurt her little did she knew you only talk big game but you don't know meaning of the family.

You don't think twice to have one of our own crucified. There's no proof that Josh is dead but now they will kill him for." Jessy tried to reason.

Sarah: Rick is my nephew I have watched him for years, he is a beast. He probably broke Josh's neck the minute they left this house.

Jessy: probably means maybe... We all don't know .(she half shouted.)

Nic: that's enough Jessy.

(Sarah had my wrist cut and took my blood in a big bowl. "You know Rick will kill you for this?" Amanda said. Sarah looked at her and snapped her fingers. "go to sleep sweet niece." Amanda fell on her face on the table. When I was completely drained, they took me down stairs and locked me to what looked like a jail cell. This was their plan all this time. They gave me water to help the healing to speed up. When I got healed they came for more blood. The cell had wolf Spain I couldn't do anything. I decided to stop drinking water so that my body doesn't heal till Rick got here. He was my only survival hope. I couldn't even howl to call other werewolves. The only thing that kept me together was hope. I knew Rick was coming for me. What Nic didn't know was that Rick and I were supernaturally connected, he was the first person I turned, he was me, we felt it when something was wrong to one of us. Where ever he was, he was feeling something was wrong with me and he was coming for me.

Rick was coming for me ☹️<3

[03/16, 13:08] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 20

Seconds turned to minutes. Minutes to hours. Hour after an hour, the light ran away as the dark approached. When the dark had its turn, the light took its turn once more. That was a sign that a day had passed. I didn't drink water nor did I eat. After a few days the hope I had that Rick was coming for me started to fade piece bit by bit. I started worrying about him, my brother and the rest of the crew more than I was worried about myself. Sarah and her husband came to the basement and forced me to eat so they can take more blood but I refused. Three days passed. No hunters showed up. No Rick showed up. "you look like crap." Jessy remarked as she was giving me plate of food and glass of orange juice. It was a first time any of the kids coming downstairs. I looked at her and turned away, I was in no mood for pep talks. "you can be supernatural and all but you still have to eat to keep your strength Mellisa." She continued. I kept quiet. She put down the plate and the glass. "im so sorry." She said before walking to the door.

"why are you here?" I asked, slowly.

"my dad told me you are not eating. I thought I could talk to you." I think she forgot the conversation we had earlier. She was not the one to knock senses to my head. I wouldn't think twice to have her for dinner. "would you stay if I eat?" I asked.

She smiled and came back to take the plate and sat next to me. She helped me to eat. I ate half of the plate and downed the juice. I felt a little bit alive. "can I ask."

Jessy: anything.

Me: where is Rick?

Jessy: you are asking if he didn't come for you?

Me: pretty much.

Jessy: he came for you but no super natural can enter this yard. My mother made it possible....

Me: and the hunters?

Jessy: they haven't show up. What do you think happened to my brother?

Me: Josh? I don't know, Rick probably broke his head the minute he realised y'all stabbed us in the back. Where are your parents?

Jessy: right out side the door. Listening. How are you feeling?

Me: much better thanks. (I giggled a little) don't they trust you?

Jessy: (she shrugged her shoulders. her phone vibrated) Its my dad. I have to. Promise to finish your food? (She looked at me and raised her eyebrows.) Please. Finish the plate.

(She patted me on the shoulder and left. Her father was already standing by the door. He told me we have a date midnight. They are almost done with me. He then locked the door. I screamed out of frustration. I sent the plate flying across the room. I threw the glass at the door, as expected... It broke. Breaking things when angry makes me feel better. I went back to the corner and sat down with my head on my hands and elbows digging my thighs. After a while I decided to calm my black ass down. Right then I started beating my self for getting the place dirtier than it already was, ants were going to be all over and it was me who wasn't going to be able to sleep. I decided to get up and clean the food on the floor. When I was to take the plate I noticed something. A note glued under the plate. I removed it gently. It read .... " eat we will need that super strength" ... That was the only thing written on the note. This must be the reason why Jes insisted I finish my food. I lit up a bit. It was hope. I smiled a little and chewed the paper. I sat on my corner hoping to see something strange happening before midnight. Ixsha lahamba but I held on to what I had, what Jes gave me.... Hope. She wouldn't have went through all the

trouble to give me so much hope if she didn't have a plan.

I passed time by counting wolf Spain flowers, I sometimes touched them, get burned and watch myself healing. After hours of boredom I heard a wall and side of the roof vibrating. I got up and stood on the other side of the cell. I watched it falling apart bit by bit. The soil fell on my cell then a huge space was created between the basement and the first floor. "do you need me to pull you out?" it was Jessy with a smug smile. I smiled back. "i got you" she said and gave me a rope to climb on. When I was out and about to thank her she said. "you can thank me later. We need to go . they won't be out for long." she grabbed my hand and we ran to her car. We drove to town and suggested we steal another car.

Me: how did you do that?

Jessy: I move the earth... I moved it. It was easy really, it doesn't take a genius to pull it off. You were in the basement which is underground I just had to find a perfect place to destroy the ground in order to pull you out.

Me: the real question is... Why? Why did you do it right after I told you I'd watch you burn.

Jes: I dont believe that. You like acting like a heartless arrogant barsted but you are not. Anyway i owed you that much. I am the reason you used your powers.

Me: thank you I guess. Pull over here. We will take a train.

Jes: where to?

Me: my pack.

(We walked through the bush in the middle of the night. We got to the cave almost in the morning. I stood on top of the cave and howled. In five minutes the whole crew was out side, some in their sleeping clothes. They looked up. There I was, I smiled and jumped down to where they were standing. My dreadlocks were all over my face, I threw my head back and shook it while running my fingers through my dreadlocks. "Rick can stop sobbing now" said Jack before attempting to give me a hug. When he was close enough, the ground shook. The space between us cracked. I looked up, it was Jessy making her introduction. "you need some help?" I asked. She was still on top of the cave. Moving umhlaba was all she could do. She didn't even have guts to jump.... 'MJ' a voice said, it was Rick getting out of the cave. He ran to me, I met him half way. "are you okay?" he asked before putting me down.

"I'm perfect." I replied.

"anytime this year? Fuck!! In this century?" Jessy shouted. Rick looked up and snapped his fingers. Jessy fell and rolled down to where we were standing, she hit her head in the process. "you didn't have to do that. Where is my brother?"

Rick: she was making noise.

Pitter: he is sleeping. Lets get inside shall we?

Rick: wait isn't this Nicholas daughter?

Me: she is but she is no threat to us. She is a friend.

Rick: how do you know? They locked you up and locked us out! She is no friend.

Me: she saved me... I think its time to get inside.

Jes: nxee I hate this witch (she murmured after getting up... Looking at Rick)

Rick: I hate you too cousin sister.

Jake: its good you are back Mellisa.

Me: its good to be home Jake.

Rick: I'm sorry we couldn't save you.

Me: at least you tried.

Rick: always.

Pitter: and forever.

Me: is Josh still breathing?

Rick: yes... What should I do with him?

(We talked getting in side. We locked the door)

Me: (I looked at Jessy) Jes what should we do with your brother.

Jes: he is just a kid Mellisa.

Me: alright he will leave. But if he gets out of his lane I will not hesitate to give you his balls for a romantic dinner.

(I went to wake my brother up. Like wise we were both happy we were both still alive. He put me up to speed on what has been happening while I was gone. He told me how Rick had been working day and night to make a spell to break the seal Sarah put around her yard. Rick went as far as suggesting Onke should break in at Nic's house to break me out because my brother was the only was who was not supernatural who would get in Nic's yard. The plan was going to happen on the following day . I couldn't believe that Rick would even suggest that, that he would put my brother in danger. What about my stupid pack? When im not around I expected them to



do what I would do with my last breath... Protect Onke... That sent me over the edge I went to Rick flying. I took down the curtain that was meant to be a door.... "are you out of your mind Rick?" I stomped in his place. He was laying down on his back. He looked up and politely said; "about what?"

Me: you wanted to get my brother killed. How could you?

Rick: (he got up and looked at me with a straight face) it was the only plan.

Me: don't ever, I mean ever make decisions that include my brother alright?

Rick: look here Mellisa James... I don't know what's happening but I know what I'm feeling. If putting your brother in danger to save you - yes I'm mad cause I would do it over and over again. If saving you means killing your pack I would do it with a beat of my heart. When it comes to saving you... Nothing matters, not even my powers and I'm not apologetic about that. When it comes to saving you I will slaughter the entire village with no remorse even if it makes you to hate me.

(He said the last words with his hand holding my neck, his blue eyes penetrating deep through my eyes. I looked at him and felt excited yet scared I might fall and no body will catch me. For the first time I noticed how beautiful his eyes were and how deeply he cared. I wondered though... Were his feelings true or was it the supernatural bond we had. I slowly reached for his cheek and touched it. He stood still , then greeted my lips with his. Slowly.... I felt everything. He pulled me closer, I wrapped my arms around his neck. The kiss was passionate and long. He stopped so we could catch our breath. He stroked my locks to the back, put his forehead against mine, our noses kissed. We smiled at the same time.

All of a sudden my wrist was on fire. "ouch, the fuck." I yelled.

"What's wrong?" he asked.

"my wrist is burning. Wait, they are coming. They are here. Let's wake everyone."

"what is it MJ?" he followed me as I ran to wake the others.

"The hunters"

I could smell the hunters. I picked their herbs scent from my parents. When my pack was up... The hunters were kicking down the door. There was no way out. We stood there with our mouths and eyes wide open like idiots. No plan was in play.

[03/16, 13:09] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 21

"How did they know? How did they find us?" Pitter shouted looking at me.

" how the fuck am I supposed to know Pitter? Huh? How am I supposed to know?" I shouted back with my hands flying in the air as a demonstration of anger like a true black woman that I am.

"Shut up both of you.. The real question that you would be discussing is how are you going to save your pack. When we are safe you can be in others throat as you please. Gosh" Jessy yelled. Both Pitter and I stared at her in surprise. No body talked like that to alphas.

"what are you starring at? The bloody door will be down in few minutes... This is killing Rick. He can't hold it for too long. Isn't there a back door?" Jessy added. Rick was holding the door with his eyes, but it was taking too much of his energy. His body wasn't copying for that reason he was bleeding and getting weak. He was getting weaker, he was going to be down in no time. There was no back exist.

"Pitter you are an alpha. What do we do?" Jack asked.

Pitter: we fight. This is our home, we respected their space they are not doing the same to ours so we bite to kill.

Me: are you insane? The minute they get here they will throw tear gas every where.

Jake: guys, guys Rick is dying ...

Me: oh my God. We have to do something. There must be something.

Josh: Jessy and I can bring the walls together behind the door.

Me: do what you have to do Rick can't do this any more.

(Rick was already down when Jessy and Josh held hands and with their other hands they broke the walls made of stones, they brought them down, they closed the door but the hunters were determined so it wasn't going to hold them off for too long. They were going to still find their way in. )

Jes: this is not going to hold them off for too long.

Pitter: can't Rick do his witch juju and put a seal so they can't get in?

Me: he is weak. His heart is almost not beating.

(Rick sounded like a dying man, in fact he was a dying man. I fed him my blood but for some odd reasons he coughed it out. As for Jessy and Josh they got weaker they couldn't even move a single storm. That's the problem about powers .. A mind is strong , its supernatural but you have a human body that can collapse any time when the mind over do the use of power. )

Pitter: they are all dying aren't they?

Me: I can fix them I have to.

(I went to Jessy. My wrist was already bitten. I fed her my blood, he couldn't let go of my arm until I pulled it off. I gave Josh a lil bit of my blood... Not to make him strong but to keep him alive. I felt a little dizzy, Jessy almost sucked me dry, Jack saw this and got me water)

Jake: this is not good Pitter our people are dying. If a blood werewolf dies, some one who supposed to be immortal how are we going to survive this.

"Hahahaha, bloody hell. The bitch is so back. Y'all can thank me later." Said Jessy. "watch and learn sweet heart" she said to his little bother. She stood there, stretched her hands and concentrated. Everything moved. She laughed like an evil's daughter that she was. The top of the cave was down in a blink of an eye. That's how strong my blood made them. The pack help my brother , Rick , Josh and Jessy to get out using the whole Jessy created. We stood ontop of the cave and saw the hunters still trying to dig their way in the cave.

"what now?" Onke asked.

"We have to leave. Find a safe place." I said.

Pitter: we have the up hand now. We are out of the cave, they don't know that. They are still trying to get in the cave. I say we attack. We go from the hunted to hunters. We are not going to live on the run. We are predators not bitches.

Me: look at Rick Pitter, look at him. He is dying. His heart beat is decreasing. He is fucking dying and you talk about going to war? Lets lose this battle to win the war.

Jessy: its okay Mellisa I can take them alone . they will be six feet under ground in seconds.

(I tried to take away Rick's pain but I couldn't. I started to panic. I could feel his heart beating

slowly and slowly giving up. I held his hand, tears trickled down my cheeks, "you can't die on me now. Not today Rick. Not in this century. You just have to hold on a little longer I will figure something out" I said, sobbing. This time everyone was quiet. They all looked at me, I smelt empathy but in Pitter's eyes there was irritation. "I think we have to get out of here. Find a place safe and a way to get Rick better." Jessy said with her hand on my shoulder.

"My pack and I are not leaving. This is our land we will fight for it. When you leave, please don't come back. You led these people right at us." Pitter exclaimed.

Jack: what's wrong with you? We can't take down hunters alone and you know that. ..which is why we stayed hidden all our lives. You always said Mellisa is family, she is part of our pack...now this?

Pitter: if you wanna go with Mellisa, go. I'm not holding a gun in your heads. We know these woods like back of our hands. We can not be hunted here.

Me: its okay Jack. We are leaving and we will never come back as the Alpha commanded. I'm sorry I brought you trouble. Stay well.

( Jessy helped me with Rick. We carried him through the woods. When we were tired Josh and Onke took their turn. Its really strange who you would end up with in your corner. We took a train and got off not far for Rick was as good as dead. We took a nearest motel. Josh and Onke put Rick on the bed.)

Josh: can't we take him to the hospital? He doesn't have a pulse Mellisa. He is not breathing.

Me: no, no, he can't be.

Onke: I'm so sorry sister Bae but Rick is..

Me: Rick is what? dead? Are you out of your freaking mind? Rick can't be dead, he can't be dead, Rick can't die on me.

(I knelt beside him. Only then i got to listen. There was no heart beat, no pulse. It hurt so much more than a broken rib. I could take broken bones because I knew they would grow back. I couldn't lose Rick, I couldn't accept that he was no more. I simply couldn't take that shit. How can I be able to run miles in seconds, hear things feet away, smell things that i shouldnt, boot powers of earthquake makers, get in people's head, make people think what I want them to think, brink back their lost memories, heal wounds, take away other people's.... How can I do all these impossible things but not be able to save the man I love?

There was no way I was going to take it. It was a slap on the face

[03/16, 15:53] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 22

There had to be something. It was supernatural.

"We need magic. This is supernatural right? There has to be something we could do. Magic fixes everything. Jessy call your mom. Call your mom." I half shouted, crying. Jessy knelt next to me and wrapped her hand around my shoulders.

"You need to calm down MJ. If you want to save Rick you have to calm down and think." She reasoned. I pushed back my dreadlocks trying to find where my cool went. 'You are a she wolf damn it pull it together' I thought to myself. I took a deep breath to calm myself down. I tie my locks into a bunny.

"we need a witch." I said.

Jessy: what makes you think my mother will be willing to help? She tried to kill you. I stabbed them in the back.

Me: who said anything about her will? She is going to help because she might be a witch but she is still a mother. She knows labour pains.

Jessy: I know what you thinking. Do you think my parents give a single shit about me? I betrayed them.

Me: it's not you that I'm betting on.

Jessy: my little brother? No, no Mellisa. My dad will kill you both.

Me: Josh is the last born they wouldnt do anything to hurt him. The only reason they moved on is because they though he was dead.

Josh: its okay Jess.

Jessy: its not okay Josh. Nothing about this is okay. If my mother helps you, you will forever be in his debt. Think about this Mellisa.

"Guys, guys... He is breathing" my brother yelled.

We all ran back to Rick. Its a miracle. His heart is building sooooft.

"I think there's a way to save him. Depending on how bad you want to save him sis Bae." My brother said.

Me: what? What Onke? Say it.

Onke: the only way to save him is by completing the immortal spell.

Me: we don't have a witch Onke! How are we supposed to know the spell you are not helping bra!

Onke: sometimes uyandixaka yazi! You forget your abilities. You can get in his head and get the damn spell .... But there's one thing you need to know.

Me: speak Onke James. Kutheni uneshori nje!

Onke: if you complete the immortal spell you will be giving him everything he ever wanted. He will go back to being a beast. The bond you have will break. There will be no werewolf blood in his system. It will be like you never turned him. It will all go back to square one.

Me: I don't care.

Onke: he might feel different about you, you know. His mind will be clear.

Me: I said I don't care. Please give us a room.

(They left the room displeased with what I was about to do. I exhaled . this is what my heart wanted. I held the sides of his head and concentrated. I asked him how to complete the immortal spell. The memory took me where he was having a conversation with his sister. He told his sister that in order to complete the spell he had to kill a new born baby – pure heart and a sneak. Then mix the baby's blood with the sneak blood and mine. There was a book that had a spell, I got closer and saw what the spell was.

When I got back to life my nose was bleeding but I couldn't careless. I cleaned it and went out to the others. "where can I get a pen and paper." I asked but they all looked at each other. I rolled my eyes back and showed my claws. I wrote the spell on the wall with my claws.

"Jessy I will need a snake."

Jess: what the hell for? And where the heck am I supposed to get a snake?

Me: in a snake park maybe. I don't know honestly. Thanks in advance for your help.

(I winked at her and went to the room where Rick was laying. I drew a circle around him and drew the symbols I saw on the book spell.

"Are you sure about this MJ?" Onke asked standing by the door.

Me: 114%

Onke: I thought to finish the spell you need a full moon.

Me: I'm a blood werewolf, an alpha, I broke the moon curse. I am not controlled by it which means I do what I want when I want.

Onke: what if this is what Rick wanted.

Me: Rick died and came back trying to save us Onke... Cut the dude some slack.

Onke: it looks like some is in love.

Me: voetsek OJ

(We both giggled. When I was done with the drownings I locked the door.

"can you be my hero?" I asked Josh. He nods .

"Are you sure I can count on you?" i added.

Josh: what do you need MJ?

Me: I need to find a way to cure your cousin brother.

Josh: what do you need me to do?

Me: I need you to look out for him and my brother while I'm gone. Can you do that for me. Pretty please. I will owe you one.

Josh: for sparing my life I will do it.

Me: thanks Josh. Here is a dose of a boost. If anyone who is not one of us opens that door, do what you do best. Burry them.

(I bit my wrist and gave it to him. He sucked my blood. That shit hurt ke kodwa. I pulled out. I told them I needed to get something little did they know that that something is a new born baby. I held myself together and went to the receptionist. "im sorry sir don't you know of a hospital near by? I don't feel well." I said blowing my nose. He told me where to take the taxis and sorts. But its Mellisa James I am faster than a Gautrain I don't need to take a taxi. I ran my way to the hospital. When I got there , there was a long queue. As hoped there were a couple of pregnant women but I mean its south Africa where being pregnant is a style... Its literally the order of the day. There are pregnant teenagers in every corner. I went up to this girl who had a huge tummy. "oh my God, hey how are you." I said touching her braids, she looked shocked at first but by touching her head I was planting a thought in her head.... 'dont be afraid, its Lizzy your old best friend. You love her,trust her and listens to her.' The thought i planted.

Girl: OMG Lizzy!! How are you? Its been forever bestie. Look at you, you look gorgeous.

Me: thank you boo. I look gorgeous yourself. The little one is growing.

Girl: ncooo I'm due in two weeks. (She brushed her belly.)

Me: remind me again how old are you? What grade are you doing?

Girl: ouch that hurts. How can you forget girl. I'm 15, doing grade 9. I hope the next question won't be about the baby daddy.

Me: why is that?

Girl: he ran the minute I told him I was pregnant.

Me: I'm so sorry. How are your parents hoping.

Girl: its bad, we are counting on this baby's grant.

(That was it. I had to put this girl out of her misery. I had to save this unborn baby from the horrible life he was about to be born into. )

Me: hey would you please walk me out,I just remember I forgot something.

Girl: sure the queue is long anyway.

(When walked to the taxis she told me she had to go back. I touched head, told her to shut the fuck up and do what I ask her to do. The taxi wasn't full. I told the driver to drive off anyway. He dropped us off by the motel. I took the girl to our room, the receptionist gave me a side eye. I made him to forget he ever saw me.

When we got to the room Jessy was back. She had a sneak in a sports bag. "i will forever hate you for this." She said.

Onke: who is she?

Girl: I am Lizzy's friend, Phiwe.

"Lizzy???!!" they all said it at the same time. I raised my eyebrows as a sign of disapproval. They giggled. I took the sports bag and the girl to where Rick was laying. I then locked the door behind me. I told them I don't want to be disturbed. I must be left alone.

I told Phiwe to lay on her back, not to be scared, it won't hurt and to keep her mouth shut. Its a necessary sacrifice. I'm sorry Phiwe. I gave her a C-section with my claws. She died immediately but her baby girl survived. To complete the spell I had to kill the baby and the snake. Mix their blood with mine and say the spell; draw a cross with bold on Rick's forehead. And make him drink the blood.



For a minute I looked at the red crying baby girl. I couldn't help but asked myself; is Rick worth this innocent soul? Is he worth it?

[03/16, 15:53] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 23

While holding the baby she started crying aloud. I ordered her to be quiet but she didnt fall for my mind control tricks. Still holing her, not sure what to do Onke banged the door. He told me to open up. I wasn't going to let him see the evil i have became. I refused to open the door, i told them to live me the fuck alone. I knew i wasn't going to see heaven and i needed no lecture. By that time tears were streaming down my face! I couldn't believe what i did, how far i went. Rick was breathing, his breathing was picking up bit by bit. After many attempts Jessy and Onke broke the door. They were stormed to see me holding a baby, my hands covered in blood, Phiwe laying still with no pulse. I looked at my brother and saw disappointment and regret. He probably regretted the day he saved me from our parents. He probably saw what they meant when they said i shouldn't be alive. To save many lives i had to be terminated. I looked at myself and i saw disgrace. How did i get this far.

"You dont want to kill an innocent baby MJ. This is not you Mellisa, this isnt you. Give me the baby okay." my brother said getting close to me. Even little Josh witnessed this.

"Bloody hell Mellisa! What did you do?" Jessy asked tears threatening her eyes.

"Let her go... give her to me little sister. If you take this innocent soul this will haunt you for the rest of your life, which is eternal, thats a very long time . There will be no going back. You dont want to do this Mellisa" my brother added, taking the baby away from my hands. He gave her to Jessy, Jessy took the sheets and covered her.

I looked at them and saw hate and mistrust. I was disgusted at myself just as much, mean eyes weren't making the pain any easier. I looked at Phiwe and started to feel really sorry for her. Even if she was a slut she didn't deserve this. I tried to put the wound together and heal her. I fed her my blood but she was not taking any.

"Its too late Mellisa. She is already cold. She is gone. You cant save her. You cant bring the dead to life." said Onke before wrapping his arms around me. He squeezed me and let me cry.

"I just want him back." i said between sobs.

"Im sorry sis bae but no body is worth that much. Especial Rick. I didn't know you have to go through this to complete the spell. If i had known i wouldn't have told you. Im sorry vha?" he sang.

I pulled myself together and went to the bathroom. I washed my hands and my face. I looked myself in the mirror and the person starring back at me wasn't me, i couldn't recognise her. I knew i was mean, rude, arrogant and rebellious but never evil. Maybe my parents were right, i wasnt supposed to live, i deserved to be hunted down and be killed like an animal. Tears trickled down as i thought about what i almost did because of a man! Rhaaaa akhonto iyindoda.

I got in the shower fully clothed. I let the water wet my clothes. I listened to every part of my being as an attempt to try and pull myself together. I was mentally and emotionally exhausted. "MJ, are you okay?" little Josh asked. "Just a minute." i shouted back.

"Rick is recovering. You should see him. Onke says you might be able to cure him now." he said.

I rushed out of the shower with my clothes still wet, i took a towel and wrapped it around my head and headed where they were staying. When i got to the room my brother was holding the new born baby, Jessy was finishing cleaning up the mess i made. He took the blanket and rolled Phiwe's body. They all looked rather scared of me and my unpredictable personality. I knelt next to Rick and held his hand. A little smile was drown in his face. I smiled a little. I bit my wrist and fed him my blood. He drank slowly. This time he didn't cough it out. He fell asleep right after.

"Mellisa, the baby is hungry. She was just born, she needs to be fed otherwise she wont stop crying and will die." Jessy said, i looked her like 'bra are you fucken for real'

They all looked at me like they are expecting a miracle to fall upon them.

"What am i supposed to do Jessy?"

Jessy: i dont know MJ but i know you are not supposed to let A new born baby be hungry.

Me: the taxi rank isnt far from here. There are shops there, Onke will go grab her something to eat.

Onke: new born babies drink warm water

Jessy: not these days papa....

Me: alright then, you go and buy what babies eat.

Jessy: buy with what? This is really world baby you buy with currency. Im hungry myself.

Me: then where I, Mellisa James supposed to get the money.

(they all looked at me like i was a retard.)

Me: what? (i shouted out of my freaking head)

Onke: you can be isibhanxa when you want.

Me: ini?

Jessy: agr are you acting dumb or you genuinely are dumb?

Me: one wrong word im pulling out that filthy tongue of your.

Jessy: see? Thats the fucking problem. You use your powers for violence how are about you put them in good use? It looks like we all could do with some change here, dont you think?

(Jessy was getting too comfortable now and i didnt like it)

Jessy: hold it right there Miss red eyes. Im sorry okay? What i meant to say was; you can compel people to think what you want them to think. Cant you get in a shop, take everything we need and compel the cashier to think you have paid?

Me: i will need clothes. I cant walk outside with these.

(i raised my eyebrows)

Jessy: bitch (she murmured )

Me: you know i heard that right?

Jessy: i didnt forget your special hearing, actually i was counting on it.

(she threw me the shorts and sweater she was wearing)

Me: i will need the boots too.

Jessy: these arent for free. Get me lots of chocolate and milk.

(i smiled at her and put the clothes on. Before i went out i gave them my blood for safety. Apparently i was like a battery. It wasn't a once off thing. They had to feed everytime they needed a boost. My locks were still wet so i went out with a towel wrapped around them. When i got to the shop i asked an assistance what i could get my few hours old niece. She helped me out. I took everything else i needed and of course lots of milk and chocolate i didn't want to see myself underground. I was getting better with mind control. When i was at the till i leaned over like i wanted to ask something i told cashier i paid and i need my R1000 change. Good thing there was no one behind me. She gave me my change and my slip. I hired a metre taxi to get to the motel. I did the same to the old man, i asked him to help me get my stuff to my room and tipped him R50 on top of the 'payment' im sure he Couldn't forget my generosity. But got disappointed when he noticed there was less money in the wallet.

"Hahaha oh my freaking God"

i said upon opening the door without even hearing myself. Rick was well like nothing happened. I put down the plastic and jumped to him. He gently wrapped his arms around my waist and picked me. He then put me down and give me proper hug like a normal boyfriend.

"How are you freaking alive?" i asked pushing him.

"You gave me a fright . Dont ever do that." i added.

"Im back... i am too awesome to die. Even God couldn't handle me." He said pulling me closer and kissing my forehead. When he was about to kiss me on the lips Onke said;

Onke: guys, theres a baby here. She doesnt need to see that. She was just born.

We all chuckled a little. For a moment my sins were forgotten. We sat on the couch and ate... and had a good conversation. The real question that was bothering me was; what are we going to do with the baby. We were on the run, we didn't have a stable home to raise a baby. Yhea i know what you are probably thinking, you are thinking i should have thought about that before i pulled her out of her mother's womb with my bear hands. To answer you on that note; my intention wasn't to rise her but to kill her... then i failed.

Midnight when everyone was asleep Rick and i decided to take a shower... it was his idea.

"They told me what you almost did." he said caressing my back with water. I kept quiet.

"If it will make you feel any better; if i was in your position i would have killed the baby with a blink of an eye. So that makes you a better person than i am because you didn't. Im glad you didn't do it, i wouldn't want you to live your immortal life miserable, haunted by a baby. You are special Mellisa."

I smiled to myself. He turned me around to look at him. He aggressively grabbed my locks and pulled me closer to his naked body. He kissed me hungrily. After sometime he turned me around and pinned me against the wall.

The violence alone was a total turn on.

Cheers to supernatural sex

[03/16, 15:55] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 24

Rick and I spent the night in the bath tub. He had his arms around me all night. It felt safe, almost too safe that i forgot about reality. I forgot about what I brought to myself and to the rest of us- a new born baby. I forgot that, that wasn't our home, we were on the run. Once reality kicked-in in my mind I jumped out of the tub and went to check on the baby. She was sleeping with Onke on the bed, Jessy and Josh were on the couch.

"You are up early." Said my brother whom I thought was sleeping.

"I needed to check if you were okay." I said getting on the bed next to him.

"You mean after the noise you and Rick made last night? The baby finally fell asleep thanks for being so considerate." While he was pissed I had a smug smile on my face as the event of last night started to play in my head. I couldn't myself but blush, Onke kicked me off the bed when he saw this ; swearing at me.

"I feel for this kid who will grow in such environment." He exclaimed. This made me to pick myself up immediately.

"we are rising the kid? Are you out of your freaking mind?" i snapped.

Onke: you killed her mother,do you have a better plan?

Me: quite frankly I do.

(I went to Phiwe's bag and checked her card. It had her address. Her body was starting to smell. We had to get rid of it. )

Jee: would you please keep it down? We couldn't sleep last night because you were moaning, howling and screaming now we are trying to make up for it. Geez!

(She said with her head up and threw it back on the pillow. I raised my hands in the air. I was in a jolly mood to entertain any of their madness. Sexual frustration makes you miserable especial if someone you know is getting some.

I went back to my brother and showed him Phiwe's hospital card)

Onke: what is this?

Me: Phiwe's address. This is where we are going to drop the baby and his mother's body. (He gave me a disapproving look) its the best I can do brother. We can't run around with a little baby.

Onke: I didn't say anything.

Me: good.

(I went back to the bathroom. Yhea its weird I know but there was no enough places to sleep and it was much comfortable)

Rick: I thought you ran away.

Me: where would I go? (I lay onto of him)

Rick: I don't know, to the sunset maybe...

Me: how can I go to the sunset without you? (

Rick: I was asking the same. (He kissed the top of my head. We chuckled. He played with my locks.... Rolling them around his finger.)

Rick: have you decided what we are going to do with the baby?

Me: I'm taking her to her mother's home.

Rick: lol are you sure? I thought you were falling in love with her....

Me: what? Me and babies? No ways.... She is just a baby.

Rick: you don't like babies?

Me: not even a bit.... I know your next question.... The answer is; just because I don't like babies I don't mean they should die. I just don't want one.

Rick: I want bunch of babies.... With you...

Me: hahaha you are a funny witch...

Rick: I'm serious. I want a family someday.

Me: I thought you don't want weaknesses. Family is a weakness.

Rick: being in love is a weakness.

Me: you are in love?

Rick: very much so. You are not only beautiful, you are exciting, you are fun, you are strong and you are loving and caring, its in your eyes when something when your brother is in danger. You used to be kind but you have been through so much the past six months but you are still holding it together. Its very hard not to be in love with you Mellisa James.

(Heavens take me now, I blushed I swear my black cheeks turned grey... I looked up at him and kissed him. The kiss was casual but intimate, more like marking a territory. I felt warm as I felt his manhood waking up, Pocking against my belly. I moved from his lips and went for his neck. He had his strong hands under on my butt. I only had a towel wrapped around my body, no panties nor bra due to last night's occasion. We tried to be as quiet as possible. He kind sat up straight on the the bath tub, I turned around and sat on top of him. His anaconda pocked on my bum, I placed one leg out of the tub to make a room for it. It found a way to its spot, I bit my lower lip as it popped in, I tried not to moan, then i bounced up and down on it... Slowly, my eyes were closed, listening to it as it dag every corner, Rick had his hands on my boobs and kissing my neck at the very same time. I held his head with my right hand and balanced with my left hand. I then put my legs together and rocked back and forth. A soft moon escaped as the cum was building up.... The sensational... oh Laws... Have mercy even the werewolves are still your children. I felt my claws glowing, Rick was groaning. I picked the pace up, rocked back and forth harder and faster. I howled as I came, my pussy lips and legs vibrated .... The bath tub broke....

"you are disgusting ... You both are fucking disgusting." Jessy said standing on the door. Both Rick and I were naked. I was so embarrassed. I covered my mouth with my right hand and looked at Rick, he smiled and raised his eyebrows. I wanted to laugh but the look on Jessy's face brought me back to reality that I was on the wrong. We slowly got up and picked our clothes. Jessy shook her head and closed the door behind her. The minute she left we busted out and laughed. We picked the pieces of the tub and put them in one place. I sat on the toilet seat and peed, Rick watched me like I was doing something special. "dude that's just creepy." I said.

"look at you, you are glowing." He replied. We both laughed.... Yile good sex [OBJ]:v ..... We took a quick shower companied by a quick sex. We lotioned and wore the same clothes – struggle of being on the run. We went on the kitchen, "our kids" were eating but there was no food left for us [OBJ]:v so babe and I made our food together and joined the others.

"next time you wanna shag, compel the lady to give you another room. I'm under age to hear such" silly Josh said with out look at us. We laughed and apologised, that was like signing a certificate to get all kinds of insults but we just kept laughing.

"i just fed the baby, she is full and clean." OJ said.

Me: where did you wash her?

Josh: in the sink because the bathroom was occupied you know what I mean.

Me: get out of here. (I hit him on the shoulder)

Jessy: she is ready to be taken home.

Me: just a minute. I'm almost finished.

(We finished up eating, threw the paper plates on the dust bean and tried to clean up. It was a beautiful day, my spirit was up, I was generally in a very good mood. Rick and I would glance at each other and smile and the others would be bored to death. We tell them to suck it up OBJ:v and they throw word stones at us. )

Rick: its time to take the baby home.

Jessy: we are ready.

Rick: good, do we have to take Phiwe's corps? Its lot of work.

Me: yes we do...

Rick: but people die all the time and not get the privilege of being buried at their homes.

Onke: like my parents right?

Me: Onke?? Come on. Phiwe is going home, I killed her in an attempt of bringing you back. You owe her that much.

Onke: no MJ you are acting like Rick is a perfect guy, like he is heaven sent.

Me: OJ please, I thought were passed that. What's wrong with you? Give a dude a second chance, please. For me tle ... Doesn't what he did the past few days count something? He almost died protecting us.

Jessy: guys we are a team now... Onke, your sister is as dirty as my cousin brother. Hash tag the baby your are holding right now.



Onke: shut up Jessy.

Jessy: shut up too ... Sissy!

Onke: sissy? Uyandinyela lomtana MJ.

Jessy: are you talking to me? Because if you are you'll make sure I understand the language.

"shut up both of you. Geez! We are all here now, we have each other's back and that's what matters. How we met doesn't matter." I said cutting my brother short but he found his tongue again.

Onke: no bad blood ALPHA (said in a mocking way) its my job to protect you. I was reminding you that the man you are sleeping with is the very same man who wanted every drop of your blood. When the supernatural hold you have on him breaks, we will be back in square one.

Rick: what supernatural hold?

(Rick asked confused. All my glow faded. The joy disappeared. We were already on the way out of the motel. Before I could find words to explain what Onke meant my wrist burned. ... Like the way it did when the hunters attacked us. This meant hunters were not far. Now I had two problems on my hands...

Onke's loose tongue

Bloody hunters...

[03/16, 15:56] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 25

"The hunters are near."

I said jumping in the car, Rick put Phiwe's body in the boot of the car and they all got in. I mind controlled the driver to drive off to the address on the card.

"How did you know?" Rick asked?

"I felt the same pain I felt when they first attacked us." I told.

It happened that Phiwe's home wasn't far. We knocked, but there was no response. I ripped off the lock and we got in, there was complete silence. It looked like no one had been here for a very long time. The furniture was dusty. I looked at Rick, he shrugged with a sad face and eyes full of unanswered questions. I knew exactly what was bothering him. "no body had been here for a very long time." he said.

I tried to be calm but I found myself punching the wall so hard. "damn it." My wrist wasn't completely cold. Hunters were somewhere in town.

Jess: what now?

Me: the hunters are coming. We can't run around with a new born baby.

Jess: we know that Mellisa. I'm asking the next step. You ripped off the baby from her mother's tummy, you should have a plan. (She shouted)

Me: say that more time. (I said calmly, getting closer.)

Jess: fuck off...

(The floor where I was standing started cracking)

Jess: one more step... I'm fucking burying you.

Me: I'm faster. I will have your heart in my hand before you can.....

Jess: (she cut me short) but your brother isn't. Mine on the other side is getting quite good at this. (Bitch)

Rick: Mellisa you don't have to threaten people when they speak out their minds. Now let's get back to business. The baby.

Me: (my wrist was now on fire. They found us) they are here.... Let's go to the car now. (I shouted, kind of panicking)

Rick: maybe its time to stay and fight. Let's use the energy you have to fight each other... To fight the enemy.

Onke: and the baby?

Me: you are right Rick, we can't run forever. I know what to do.

(I took the baby from Onke and sped out of the house. I went to the guy who was driving for us, he was still on the drive way, I told him not to move. I opened the front door and put the baby, I went to the driver's side and smiled at him. "drive away with her, when someone asks, tell them you found her in the dust bean. Take her to the police and don't leave until you are sure she is safe,,,, leave only when she is with social workers or adopting agencies. You never saw any of

us." I told him.

"I will not leave until I am sure she is safe. I never saw any of you." He said before speeding the car off to the end of the road. I went back to the house. Everyone was pacing up and down. Rick looked troubled more than scared of that's coming.

"Rick the hunters are coming. You look distracted." I said getting close to him.

Rick: tell me what your brother meant

Me: can we do this after we have dealt with the hunters.

Rick: I'm distracted and I won't be able to focus. Onke what did you mean?

Onke: (he looked at me) I'm so sorry I thought he knew.

Rick: I. Asked. You. A. Question.

(Rick said concentrating on my brother. Onke started choking and coughing. He couldn't breathe. I asked him to stop but my plea fell on deaf ear... I panicked and howled loud. In shock she stopped and ran to a corner and hugged himself. He glanced at me in fear and apologised. My Alpha powers were still working on him. He was still my pack and we still had the bond but when he is angry the witch blood was pushing over. I ran to my brother and helped him to get up. Then I went to Rick and sat next to him.

"I'm sorry" I said. He was now back to his not so normal self. He just stared at me.

"When I turned you, a supernatural bond was created. Your first instinct is to keep me safe, make me happy. I was scared if you learned this things with change." I said softly.

"you were scared to tell you I'm your bitch because you thought the way I feel about you will change." He told.

Me: I wouldn't put it that way.

Rick: how would you put it?

Me: you are more like my guardian angel.

(We both smiled)

Rick: I love you Mellisa with or without the bond.

Me: without the bond you wanted to kill me Rick.

Rick: that was before I got to know you.

Jess: ncoooo

(They laughed)

Me: fuck off Jessy maan.

(She stuck her tongue out and showed me a middle finger. I found a nearest object and threw it to her... She laughed cause I missed.)

Josh: no fucking way.

Me: what?( I got up...Josh was standing the window)

Josh: those must be the hunters. Fuuuuuck! It looks like I signed my death certificate.

(I peeped through the window and saw about 8 armed men. Rick came behind me, he moved my locks to the other side so that he can also see from behind me. I sighed...)

Rick: (with an evil mind) its game time baby.

Me: they have guns, I have claws.

Jessy: they walk on the ground we control.

Onke: ( raising his hand) and me? I'm still here.

(We all looked at him and laughed.)

Josh: run for your life brother... I will be right behind you.

Jessy: I can't do this alone baby brother.

Me: (talking to my brother) find a place safe...but not the closet or under the bed. Its now or never. I need you to know this; I love you and I'm grateful you are still here sticking with my stubborn and mean ass. (I looked at Rick, I didn't have to say any thing. My eyes did all the talking. He pulled me closer and kissed me)

Rick: I love you more. No harm will come to you or your brother; always and forever.... With or without the supernatural bond.

( he let go of me and went to the door. The men had guns pointing at us. We all got out of the house and stood in front of the door, they were inside the gate. This was war, they started it, we were going to finish it. We were more than ready. I stretched my neck and changed to a pure white werewolf form. This was their first time seeing my werewolf form. I could smell the envy, Rick had a silly charming smile on his face. My wolf form was now taller, I could feel the power. Rick brushed my head fur and said..... "i believe you are not here to just stand there. So gentlemen shall we?"

Like they had been waiting for a command they fired but Rick being a Witch he stopped the bullets with his eyes and with help of his hands. Josh and Jess held their hands and shook the ground. Rick wasnt strong enough to hold objects with his mind for a long time.... Apparently it

was a wolf blood that made his body weaker. I liked my human form with claws and speed, werewolf form was a show off especial when facing humans. I shifted back to my chocolate human form. I was naked as the clothes were ripped off when i shifted but i coulsnt careless. The hunters were still shooting its like they knew Rick wasn't strong enough, I made my way to the first guy and ripped his head off with my bear hands, the second one I went 'caty' on his I tore him in shreds .... The ground got worse and worse, when its started cracking , the other guys lost balance and fell in a whole created by Josh and Jessy, J&J were tired and losing it. They hadn't had my blood in a long time. The sight of Josh, Jessy and Ricky destructed me. I was now alone all hunters were down. When I got my concentration back I turned around and some guy who wasn't one of the 8 guys we were fighting threw water full of wolf Spain in my face. I got burned and howled soooo loud. I managed to cover only my eyes, I fell down on my bum and and removed the hands from my eyes.... I couldn't believe it. This was Kwande, my oldest brother. He took out a silver sod that I once saw in my parent's office.... Little did I know it was going to kill me one day. I got lost in his murderous gaze. I just laid there and waited for him to out it in my heart. I heard Rick screaming "no" but he was down. There was nothing he could do. Kwanda pushed the sod on my left boob, a tear escaped my eye as I listened to the sod piercing through.

Then there was a very loud and powerful howl from close by. He got distracted and looked around. Out of no where a big werewolf with shinny black fur came running. It was beautiful.

[03/16, 15:56] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 26

Then there was a very loud and powerful howl from close by. Kwanda got distracted and looked around. Out of no where, a big werewolf with shinny black fur came running. It was beautiful, it was bigger and taller than my wolfself , shiny and smelt of mint. It jumped at Kwanda, his sod fell far.... The wolf stood on top of him and howled, when it was about to bite him I shouted "Nooo." it stopped .... It Dragged my brother by its tooth and threw him out side of the gate. I got up and sat on my bum and watched it walking towards me. There was something in its eyes, they were not just red... They were rosy red. I felt its presence as it came closer, I inhaled its mint scent, it was intoxicating. It stood right in front of me and traced my jawline and my chin with its nose. I let it and slowly touched its soft fur. Before, I felt so much anger that wasn't mine but now I felt calmness. I wasn't scared, I somehow felt awkwardly safe. It was like we were two connected power sources. I was brought back to life by my brother calling my name.... I looked at the wolf and smiled. I got up and went to my brother who was offering me his jacket. I wore the jacket which was covering just up to my butt. I then went to Rick and asked how he was feeling.

"Who is it?" he asked trying to get up.

"I don't know." I replied shaking my head. It was still in wolf form, it dragged all the hunters except my brother who got up and ran for his life... It dragged them to the whole J&J made. We watched it doing this. My brother helped Jessy and her lil brother to get up. I gave them bit of my blood. The wolf stood and watched this. We stopped and looked at it. Rick wrapped his arms around me. My heart got heavy, channelling its anger I guessed.

Its eyes changed to bright red. I was anxious, I wrapped my arms around Rick and buried my head on his chest. Confused.

The black wolf ran in circles in front of us, stopped, looked up and howled. Its howl was so powerful I felt my wolf wanting to get out. My eyes changed and my claws grew. I fought the wolf not to come out, I didn't want to shift.... I closed my eyes trying to block my ears from hearing the sharp howl. In the process I howled, only then it stopped. It then walked towards the gate. I followed.

"Who are you? Why did you come here if you are just going to leave? Show yourself." I said behind it.

It stopped walking and looked at me in empathy. I knelt down to match its height.

"Hi I am Mellisa James. Who are you." I asked softly. Only then it changed to a human form. A tall, dark and well built man stood in front of me- naked. His intoxicating mint scent was all I could inhale. I couldn't help but stare. I literally froze at this sight.

"I am Alex McSmith, Alpha's son....Prince of Royal blood wolves." He said offering his hand to help me get up. Rick was already there, not pleased at all. He threw his T-shirt to Alex and picked me up. He carried me to the house, my eyes were glued on Alex. Who was this guys??? He followed.

"are you okay?" Rick asked.

"Yhea thanks."

Jessy: and who are you?

Onke: what do you want?

Josh: why did you save us? For Mellisa's blood maybe?

Alex: I am Alex McSmith, Prince of Royal blood werewolves.

Onke: you want to tell us there are other werewolves out there?

Alex: there's a world you don't even know about. But first we have to burn the bodies then maybe later we can talk.

Onke: you still haven't told us what you want, why you showed up and saved us. Why you care.

(He didn't replay at this, he only looked at me and looked the other way when Rick noticed he was staring in a most uncomfortable manner. I was starring right back at him. I couldn't get my eyes off him even when Rick noticed. I tried, heaven knows I tried I just couldn't. This made Rick to pull me closer to his chest and wrap his arms around my neck, also playing with my locks, he slowly moved in front of me to block the view. I sighed and rested in his arms. I could see my brother slowly shoving a silver sod on my breast, which was completely healed by now... I slowly touched it, then I remembered the mint scent, the shiny fur, the tall wolf, the powerful howl, the rosy red eyes, .....my heart pounded ..... Who was Alex.

"I have to talk to him." I said to Rick.

Rick: talk to who?

Me: Alex.

Rick: about what?

Me: where he comes from. The are other werewolves out there, the are people like me that I don't even know about.

Rick: do I have a say on this?

Me: no (I shook my head.)

"where are you going Mellisa" my brother asked, I smelt judgements or a lecture because my brother didn't call me by my full name unless he thought I was being reckless. He was standing by the door. Alex was out side burning the bodies.

"i have to talk to Alex." I said going out of the door.

"remember, we don't trust anyone who is out of our circle MJ."

He told... I looked at him and nodded. I proceeded to where I was going. By being near him I

would feel his power, his emotions...

"Alex is it?" I said.

Alex: yes ma'am. Mellisa James its an honour to finally meet you. (He took my hand and kissed it. His touch sent shivers down my spine. I could feel Goosebumps on my hands, arms and neck. Butterflies in my stomach were flying. The thought that Rick was watching came running to my head, composure was needed. I snatched my hand from his. I was feeling hot, uncomfortable hot and anxious.

Me: so what's your deal Alex? Most want my blood for deferent selfish reasons. What's your deal?

(he smiled, Lord couldn't Josh create some earthquake and let earth shallow me. His tooth were immaculate, white and short. I sighed and looked at the fire...)

Alex: you don't know do you?

Me: I don't know what?

Alex: what exactly do you know about being a pure werewolf?

Me: not much but I have a feeling that you are going to tell me anyway.

Alex: let me tell you a story; you probably already know that other people are born with werewolf genes like you and others are turned. The are different blood lines, each blood line have different ways of triggering the curse, some they kill, some they die and woke up shifted, some turn when they are in pain and some turn when they reach a certain age. Like in my blood line, we all turn when we are 20. There's something called mate. When you turn you supposed to find your mate. Its the gift from Moon goddess. A mate is some one you are linked with, someone you share emotions with, someone who can channel your power, someone you are bound to die with for you share their pain as well. A mate is literally your other half. When your mate have turned, their pain calls you from miles away, their scent is what calms you down even when you are at your worst. No one tells you if a person is or isn't your mate, you just know from the first sight.... I didn't even know your name or your face but I have been running, and sleeping in the woods the past six months because I heard you howl, I felt your pain. Since then, I never stopped looking for you. A Prince of Royal blood wolves is here to take his Princess home.

#This means war... But whose side is Mellisa on?

[03/16, 15:57] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf



Insert 27

We were like two connected power sources, I told you right?

There was no denying what Alex was saying, I stood there and listened to every word he was saying, I started zoning out. I started hearing him from a distance. I had a life, a family that I couldn't just abandon. But every fibre in my body told me to jump and hug him tightly and never let him go, but to think about what this will do to Rick I had to compose myself. I didn't even notice I was crying. I felt Alex's thumb removing a tear from my cheek. I looked at him, into his eyes and knew that's where I belonged. I could feel his heart beat.

"MJ, are you okay?"

I got distracted by Rick. I turned around and looked at him, he opened his arms and hugged me.

"What's wrong baby?" he asked. I cried.

"what have you done to her?" he asked looking at Alex but Alex didn't reply in stead, I felt his anger building up.... From jealousy I suspected. When I looked at him, his eyes were bright red and claws were out. That's when Rick let go of me and started brushing his finger tips together. Alex held his head and fell down, screaming. His eyes went back to their original human colour. I asked Rick to stop.

"Stop, you are hurting him. Stoop" I yelled. He stopped and walked away. I helped Alex to get up.

"Are you okay?"

"am I okay? He is your boyfriend isn't he?" he asked. I swallowed hard. Yes he is my boyfriend but I want to run to the end of the ocean with you so i thought at the back of my head. I don't reply to this.

"I understand you had a life before you knew about me. There's something I have to tell you.... As much as I don't want you to know this but it hurts me more to hide things from you. You can reject the mate bond and be with your boyfriend but they say it haunts you your whole immortal life. I just thought you should know." He told and walked to the house before I could ask any further questions. I followed him. When I was about to get in the house after Alex, my brother blocked the entrance.

"we need to talk Mellisa." He said

"Not now OJ."

He didn't listen, he pulled me by my arm and led me behind the house.

"What is going on Mellisa, who is this guy who just showed up out of no where and you have already started to follow him around. What is going on?" he shouted.

"would you please lower your voice." I pleaded.

Onke: answer the damn question.

(I sat down and folded my arms. He also sat next to me)

Onke: what's wrong sis Bae?

Me: (shaking my head) have you read about something called 'mates' ?

Onke: I have seen it but never read it.

Me: where are the journals?

Onke: I left them back at the cave. Why?

Me: its Alex...

Onke: owenzi?

Me: its Alex...

Onke: Mellisa James speak.

Me: he is my mate.

Onke: what? How do you know? MJ this is not good.... (He stood up with his hands on his head)

Onke: do you know what this will do to Rick? Bra this will be unleashing hell on earth. How do you know?

Me: I felt it even before he told me.

Onke: is that the reason he is here?

Me: yes.

Onke: isn't there a way to break the bond.

Me: why would I do that, someone was specially created for me, he is part of my soul why would I wanna throw that away.

Onke: because Rick will die and the monster in side him will be let to life. This isn't only about you Lisa but about everyone you care about.... That includes me if I may remind you.

"Here, I got it from the house." Rick said giving me a skinny jean and black sneakers.

"What are you gossiping about?" he added.

"nothing" I smiled and took the clothes and thanked him.

"we have to go back to the cave. My brother left his journals." I said.

Rick: no problem. What's wrong Onke?

OJ: nothing... I have to go to Jes.

Me: don't leave us. We are almost done.

(I tied the lances and followed my brother... Rick grabbed my arm and pulled me closer, he wanted to kiss me but it just didn't feel right anymore. I freed myself from his embrace. "we should go." I said.

"Are you sure you are okay? What was Alex saying to you that made you cry?"

Me: nothing important.

Rick: Mellisa, why are you lying to me.

(He stood on my way)

Me: let me go, please.

(I said politely. He slowly stepped aside. Onke had already told the others that we were going back to the cave. They were already waiting for me and Rick.)

Jes: what's this tension? Can you smell it? (She said looking at my brother. We were going to the Hunter's car. )

Rick: Alex thank you for saving us but I honestly think we got it from here. Thank you China.

Jes: I second Rick, I still haven't heard what you want here.

Onke: yhea I also think you should leave Alex.

Josh: who said he can follow us around anyway?

Alex: where Mellisa goes, I go.

Rick: tie your hair maybe your brains will start working. We don't need you. If you have a thing for Mellisa, hardy... She is with me. Now get lost or I will make you.

Alex: should I tell them or you are? ( he said looking at my dumb self)

Onke: OK, I think we should all go before it gets darker.

Rick: tell us what?

Jess: we are waiting.

Josh: and were not so patient. Our patience is this little.

Me: are we going or not? Onke, drive.

Rick: you might have this supernatural hold over me Mellisa but I am not entirely your bitch. What are you hiding ?

(He yelled, trapping me between a car and himself. I closed my eyes in terror. Alex jumped at Rick and shouted in his animal voice... "SHE IS MINE" Rick stopped fighting and just looked at me.

Alex got off Rick. Rick sat on his bum. .. "what did he just say" he asked.

"I am sorry Rick. I didn't know." I knelt next to him.

"what exactly didn't you know?" he asked, defeated.

"About mates, I didn't know that every pure werewolf is bound to be with someone. Other wise I wouldn't have led you on. This wouldn't have happened." I tried to explain.

"you are telling me it was all an illusion? You never loved me? Is that what you are saying? You are hurting me Mellisa James"

Me: I am very sorry Rick. I love you.

Rick: you just love him more because you are bound to be together... (I nodded, he cupped my face and looked deep in my eyes with his green beautiful eyes.) see, in my head I want to snap your head, his head, your brother's head, Jessy's and Josh's. I want to smash the windows of this car, I want to make it rain so hard, strike people with lightening.... But as much as I am plotting this evil in my head but my heart and every nerve in me can't allow me to cause you any harm. As much as I want to fight for you, Everything in me tells me to let you go because its your destination but baby I want to promise you this.... I will i will find a way to break the bond and I will come for you.... Because after breaking the bond I will love you still. That's true love Mellisa, loving people without spells binding you.

[03/16, 15:58] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 28

I looked at Rick and felt tears running down my cheeks. I loved Alex, he was made for me.... Isn't it every body's dream to meet their mate? If Moon goddess saw it fitted for every pure werewolf to have a soul mate, someone like them to cherish, protect, care for and love them for the rest of their lives why should I act like a rotten brat and throw all that away? The reason people change boyfriends is to find the right one, the one that is made for them..... Alex was soul mate, my Mr right who literally felt everything I was feeling, I looked at the situation in every angle but I saw no reason to Reject the mate bond for a witch who I have a supernatural hold over.... What happens when the hold i have over Rick breaks? One of the things I realised was the fact that you can't make everyone happy, in what ever decision you make one person will be hurt. Alex and Rick couldn't stand each other, I had to make a choice right there and then. The reason why Lucifer wasn't let free was because of the hold I had over Rick.... He couldn't hurt me nor the people I loved. He couldn't fight for me because his desire was to serve me, to make me happy and that included letting me go with my mate.

I saw pain in his eyes. I held his neck and said, "i can take it all away... I can take the pain away Rick. I can make you forget you ever met me." I held him with both my hands. He snatched them away but I held on, I was powerful than him. I couldn't leave him like that. I wanted to make him feel better, forget we ever had a thing.

"Mellisa please don't do this. The least you can do is to leave me with the memories. Give me something to fight for. Give me hope. Please,I beg of you don't take our memories. I want to remember everything, I want to remember your brown eyes, your strawberry lips, I want to remember your smile, your smooth brown skin, I want to remember it all. You turned me, we supposed to be family." After those words I let go of his head.

Shaking my head I said: " things shouldn't have gotten this far Rick. I am very sorry. I have to leave."

When I was about to leave he pulled me closer and kissed me. One last kiss. A promise kiss. I hugged him and told him how much I wanted to go with him, he said he understood, he also didn't wanna be in the same place as Alex..... "but I will find you Mellisa." He said before pulling off and told me to leave.

"Take care of yourself Rick." I told and left.

I got at the back of the car, everyone was grumpy. Onke drove off.

"why did you leave Rick, Mellisa" jessy asked.

Me: its complicated Jessy.

Jessy: stop the car OJ....

Onke: what? Why?

Jessy: my brother and I need to get out of this car.

ME: and go where?

Jessy: I don't know Mellisa..... We are fighting for you Mellisa but when things get "complicated" you don't think twice to leave one of us behind, that's not the kind of a team I wanna be in. When I risked my life and broke you out I thought you were better than this but clearly I was wrong. Do I have to remind you how many times my cousin almost died trying to save your behind? But you leave him in the middle of no where and you're already holding hands with this man we don't even know....

Me: (I cut her short, I shouted, frustrated out of my mind) shut the fuck up Jessy. I am sick from the bottom of my stomach, I am in pain. Leaving Rick is like losing a limb. He is my pack, my only pack, leaving him hurts like fuck and I don't need you to rub salt on my wounds. So fuck off, I did what I had to do, you would have done the same. If you think I will turn back on you, if you think I can not protect you, if you think I wont return the favour. If you think I am a bad person for choosing my soul mate over your new found cousin this is your chance to get the hell out of this car.

(When Jessy was about to open the door, Alex held her arm.)

Alex: no one is going anywhere. I'm not here to break your pack or whatever you call yourselves. I'm not here to cause conflicts. I'm only here to take home my mate. As a werewolf who grew up in the werewolf land, there's nothing as important as finding your mate. I am 27, people from my bloodline find their mates the minute they turn. I have been longing for this, the past seven years. Mellisa is a package deal, if I want her I have to take y'all. I understand that and it will be an honour to go with you to my father's castle. Jessy don't leave, please stay. You saved Mellisa once, she wants to return the favour. No one will fight for my princess and not be rewarded.

Jessy: except for Rick yhea? Mellisa told me to go to hell now let go of my arm prince!

Alex: it doesn't take a mate bond to know Mellisa was lying, she is hurt, she is terrified. She wants you to stay.

(Jessy stayed, all this time I was having a moment. I was deep in thoughts. Thinking where Rick went, if he was safe. I kept quiet till we got to the train station where we were going to leave the car and took a train. Jessy and Alex bonded all the way. I lay my head on Onke's lap, he kept playing with my locks. I knew I made a right decision but Rick had my blood, it hurt like losing a pack member not a lover. Alex was a quiet guy and very sweet. He made everyone laugh with his small talks. Even the grumpy Josh started to loosen up. I was really scared Jessy was going to leave but I couldnt let my fears be seen. I couldn't let her know I cared deeply about all of them. That was a weakness and I was never going to bare it all in public. Such things make people of my kind weak.

When we started walking to the woods I smelled blood.)

Me: (looking at Alex) can you smell that?

Alex: what?

Me: blood.... There are different smells of blood.

Alex: how do you know that?

Me: cant you smell it? I can smells things which are miles away!!! Oh my God. Pitter

(The minute that hit my head I sped off. I ran to the cave. I was right, i found all three of them with their heads off. I fell down on my knees and screamed. I got sooo angry. My wolf pushed but I pushed it back. My brother and the others arrived to the sight. Alex knelt next to me and held me tight. The pain was so much better as he automatically took some of my pain. )

Alex: who were they?

Me: my family. The hunters aren't all dead. They killed my family. (I sniffed) I left them to fight my battle. Look at them now. Oh my God, I shouldn't have came here in the first place.

Onke: MJ you are a pure werewolf suck it up. You didn't come here, they brought you here I know that doesn't make you feel any better. This was their fight too. They didn't die because you. They chose to fight. Maybe this really is the time to change tables... From the hunted to hunters. Who knows what magic you can do with your 'mate'..... Let's go sis' Bae.

Jessy: I am so sorry Mellisa.

Josh: where do we go from here? I hate being on the run. I miss cheese burger.

Me: you can still go home Josh. Your parents will be happy to see you.

Jessy: don't look at me. I totally think its a good idea even though I will miss fighting side by side with my little brother but these woods aren't for teenagers.

Me: you too Jessy. Go home. Thinking about the fact that I am immortal, I will witness all your deaths, I will feel like this when one of you is gone... It pains me. I need you to go home babies..... Because I love you.

Jessy: I love you too #MsBullyDefined. That's why I'm not going any where but my brother here is going home.

Josh: gladly.

Rick's POV

The pain of watching Mellisa getting the car, leaving with her soul mate broke me. It reminded me why I stopped caring in the first place. I was different around her, she gave me life purpose and then took it away regardless of how much it hurts me. I couldn't even remember myself before the bite. All that was in my head was to make MJ happy no matter what, even if meant breaking my heart into pieces. It was the bond right? She probably thought, but I didn't think so. I loved Mellisa whole heartedly. My love for her grew everyday! Because of the kind of love I had for her I let her go, I allowed her to follow her heart. I sat there and watched the car jetting off. I cried my eyes out not knowing what direction to take next. My only life purpose was to serve Mellisa and she left me in the middle of no where. I had to find a way to break the bond. I couldn't continue to be her bitch.... Everything in me was bruised. I had to find a witch who was going to help me break the bond. A witch! The aunt I hate the most was the only living witch I knew, my sister Amanda had no magic.... My selfness was serving me right! I picked myself up, dusted my behind and walked to my taxi rank. I went to Sarah's place with nothing but hope. I hoped they were still alive. I hoped she would find it in her to help me. I hoped she had the answers.

It was my lucky day because I found them playing happy family as usual. I was shocked to see Josh in their table. I looked around hoping to see Mellisa, but she wasn't there. I stood by the door and everyone looked at me as silence enveloped.

"Please come in nephew." Said Sarah faking it. My sister didn't look pleased to see me. She was part of their family now. I left her and never looked behind. I didn't blame her.

"please sit down Rick. How can aunt Sarah help you?"

"Theres this bond I have with Mellisa. I want it gone."

I said. She smiled like she had been waiting for this moment.

[03/16, 15:58] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 29



Josh went home and the rest of us drove to Alex's place. It took us days to arrive.

Alex: we are almost there.

Me: how far now?,

Alex: couple of minutes.... This is how far a car can go, we can park here and walk.

Onke: are you sure we have to walk?,

Alex: 100% there's no car road here. Wolves don't need cars.

Me: what is this place?

Alex: its a place you'll never know if you were not born and raised here. This is where we get to be ourselves. No one is out to get us. According to geography this place doesn't exist. Everyone you see here is a pure werewolf.

Onke: so they can all run impossible fast, smell things and even read minds? Install memories and thoughts.... Interesting.

Alex: (he stopped walking and looked at OJ) what? No werewolf can do that.

Me: no werewolf can do what?

Alex: no werewolf can control minds.

Jessy: are you sure?

Alex: 100%

(Jessy, Onke and I looked at each other.)

Alex: wait.... You can read minds?

Me: yes (the truth just slipped off)

Alex: how did you smell that blood from the distance where I couldn't.

Me: I don't know.

Onke: I have been wondering the same. Maybe Alex you aren't as strong as MJ.

Alex: no, its amazing. Maybe I don't know as much as I thought I do about werewolves. Maybe you have special abilities. Is there any history of such abilities in your bloodline.

Me: I'm the only living werewolf from my bloodline. I thought I was the only living wolf.

Alex: it must be refreshing to learn that you are not alone.

(He smiled and held my hand. Truth is I was getting worried as we got closer, I don't know why but intliziyo yam yayingakhululekanga tu. In the middle of the bush, far, far away from the road we met people who Alex said they were patrollers. "they protect our Royal blood territory, there are other werewolf territories." He explained. It was like a place of werewolf. It looked like a creepy small town where everyone knew everyone. Everyone chanted as we approached the Royal house.

"He found her." One old lady shouted. They all stood up and bowed their heads as we pass. Alex went to the old lady and kissed her on the cheek. "MJ this is our advisor, granny Grace.... This is my mate Mellisa James, this one is her brother Onke James and a family friend who is like a sister to my mate, Jessy" he introduced us.

After the introduction, we went to the house where we met Alex's best friend who was like a brother to him, Tyler and his mate Olivia, they had been married for 10 years now.

"Its an honour to finally meet you. My brother was dying to meet his mate. Have he told you about the first day he felt you breaking?" Tyler said with his goofy smile and kissed my hand. I shook my head and said: " no he hasn't" I then looked at Alex who smiled and looked away.

"he went crazy. Literally crazy. When it was explained to him that the pain wasn't his but his soul mate has finally turned... He just took off saying he has to find her.... 'she is dying, i can feel her pain, I have to find her, I have to find her' he said and sped off in the middle of the night." Olivia said with the mocking tone. We all laughed, that made me to fall in love all over again. It reminded me of how I felt when he came out of no where to save my ass. I loved him even before I saw his human form. His powerful howl and black shinny fur.... Breath taking

Alex: where is Alpha and Luna?

Tyler: they are gone to Blood moon territory, there's a ceremony. Their Alpha's son is given an Alpha tittle. Soon it will be your turn to be crowed an Alpha.

Alex: hahaha not in this life time. My dad isn't going anywhere and I think running a park isn't sweets and roses.

Tyler: that's why you should prepare yourself.

Olivia: so when are we crowning you as mates?

Me: crowning us?

Olivia: yes sweetie, more like a wedding so that you can be mind linked. You are from the 'real world' aren't you?

Me: mind linked? What do you mean?

Olivia: .... You can telepath.....

Tyler: once you say aloud that you accept your mate then your minds get linked and you will be also linked to us... His pack, don't worry we will be here if you need help with anything.

Me: wait, where is my brother?

Alex: he is sleeping to the guest house.

(Olivia made me and others food. I took Jessy's and Onke's to where they were sleeping . when I got to the room, Jes was sleeping but Onke was drowning in Journals. "hey" I said putting the plates on the side table.)

Onke: thanks.

Me: find anything interesting?

Onke: yes I did actually...

Me; yhea? (Ndalungisa ukuhlala)

Onke: its too late to reject the bond MJ. Its said that the bond can be broken if its rejected on the first sight like if that day you saw Alex in a wolf form you had said you are rejecting him then it would have been broken.

Me: alright.

Onke: you don't look troubled.

Me: I wasn't going to reject the bond OJ. Rejecting a gift is rude its an invitation for bad luck. Make sure you eat before you sleep yhea?

Onke: good night sis Bae

Me: I love you big brother.

(He just smiled at me. I went out of the room and bumped into Alex on my way out.)

Me: ohhh sorry.

Alex: its my bad. I'm sorry.

Me: what are you doing here?

Alex: I came to see if you were okay. Why are you worried? What are you worried about?

Me: how do you know?

Alex: I'm your mate I feel what you feel. Right now your heart is heavy.

Me: its nothing just so much has change in a period of months.

(We talked going to his room. When we get to his room, i sat on the bed, He untied my shoe laces and helped me undress then he gave his T-shirt to sleep in. We curled under the covers, talking.)

Me: tell me about the ceremony....

Alex: umm its a wedding kinda thing. People always do it when they find their mates. Its not a necessity though, once we accept the bond aloud our minds will be automatically linked. Even if there's no ceremoy

Me: how do we supposed to "accept aloud?"

Alex: I , Alex McSmith Prince of Royal blood werewolves accept Mellisa James as my mate. I will love and appreciate her all our immortal life, not even by death should we be apart.

Me: (I giggled like a teenager) I ,Mellisa James, Alpha and only surviving werewolf of James bloodline accept Alex McSmith as my mate. I will scratch his back always and forever.

( we then sat in silence, I wondered what supposed to happen,if it worked..... 'it worked. I can hear your thoughts.' Alex said telepathic. It was so weird and exciting to communicate with someone without having to use words. " I love it when you smile and tuck your locks behind your ear." I heard him in my head. I laughed. He then planted a kiss on my lip. We fell asleep in each other's arms. I loved Alex....

I woke up in the morning, took a bath and made food for my brother. Alex wasn't in bed, I just called him in my head and asked where he was, he told me he was with the pack and is coming

back soon. Telepathy had to be the most awesome ability, i went to my brother and Jessy who seemed to be spending a lot of time together lately.

Me: how are you guys? Made any friends or you are locking yourselves in here...

Jessy: what? (Looking at my brother) eyew

Onke: what? You saying you ain't got your eyes on me?

Jessy: if you think I do you must be out if your mind.

Onke: waaaa I'm glad the feeling is mutual.

Jessy: don't lie I have seen the way you look at me....

Onke: you wish....

(Jessy being Jessy ... She stood up and took her T-shirt off claiming it was hot. My brother literally drooled all over her. Jessy was blonde, had tattoos all over and really beautiful. I didn't blame my brother for looking thirsty. " you are staring" she said.

Onke: hay voetsek this is different, I'm not gay so its expected of me to stare at a half naked hot chick.

Jessy: now you think I'm hot.

Onke: every girl is hot when naked.

Me: okay this is my cue to leave.

(To me what was going on between my brother and Jessy looked more like foreplay [OBJ]:V .... I went to the pack's house and got introduced to everyone. They all bowed their heads down to me and Alex. We chatted with the pack the entire day. I got to know most of them. This was really a different world where being supernatural was normal. Later that day Alex's parents arrived along with an Indian woman with thick long dreadlocks who Alex said was their executive advisor and some kind of psychic .... Everyone stood up when they entered the hall. Alex held my hand and smiled. "They are going to adore you" he said in my mind.

"Oh my God you look just like your mother" I mocked him. We giggled. Grace looked at us with her eye balls out as putting the dots together..... We accepted the bond we didn't wait for the ceremony.

"Alpha, Luna this my mate, Mellisa James." Alex said. His mother started singing and hugged me. His dad took my hand and kissed it. "welcome to the family." He said. Everyone sang along with mother in law. It was beautiful..... Alex was the prince, he was loved by everyone. His parents loved him for he was the only child, everyone had to love me till I gave them a reason not to.... My brother was there witnessing everything. We found a second family, so I thought, but now I know it was too early to think about such. My heart was dancing in rejoice until the Indian lady took my hand for a hand shake. She held my hand so tight, screamed and shouted.... "its her, its her." Then he couldn't breathe, she looked like she was suffocating ..... I stood there with my eyes wide open!!!

What the fuck?!!

[03/16, 15:59] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 30

She held my hand so tight, screaming and shouting..... "its her, its her." Then she couldn't breathe, she looked like she was suffocating ..... I stood there with my eyes wide open, my heart pounded, I could feel it trying to break through my chest. She looked at me as she slowly knelt down, holding her neck. Everyone was quiet and starring with questioning faces. Alex snatched her hand from mine. Alex's parents took her away from the hall and asked me to follow. I was so traumatised, my mind went on vacation, I just wanted to run out of that place but Alex was there, he took my hand and held me then everything felt alright. I felt safe in his arms, safer than I could ever be on the run alone. I lied on his chest and wrapped my arms around his waist. We shared my anxiety. "youll be fine. I'm here, I'm never going anywhere." He said in my mind.

"what's going on? What did she mean "its her"?" I asked telepathically.

"i don't know mama that's why we have to go to her"

He kissed the top of my head and held my shoulders. " I love you one"

I giggled, forgetting I had an Indian lady problem.

"I loved you two ... Two which is bigger than one."

"but one is first"

Our mind conversation was interrupted by Oliva who was sent to call us. We went to the big royal house where the elders were. When I entered I could hear the Indian lady's heart beat

pounding like she was racing.

“Mha Naidoo tell us what did you see when you touched her hand. What did you mean when you said its her.” The Alpha pleaded, putting his hand on her should. But Naidoo kept on shaking her head and biting her nails.

“Did you see anything when you touched her? What can be so dark to you child that terrified Naidoo so much.”

The Alpha's first question was directed to Grace who was also their advisor and the second one was directed to me. I swallowed hard.

“ you know I don’t have the same gifts as Naidoo Sir I’m just an advisor.” Grace said feeling helpless. Luna came in with a glass of water and gave it to Nadioo. Luna is an alpha from another pack who joins his pack with his soulmate's pack, she posses just as much power as Alpha but there can't be two Alphas ... She is then called Luna.

Luna: you have to talk Naidoo, she is just a kid. She looks like a nice girl. She will not harm you.

(Naidoo kept on shaking her head and I was losing my patience. I was literally rolling my eyes right now. I started tapping my feet on the floor. )

Me: any time today please...

(I startled her cause I heard her heart jump. They all looked at me.)

Alpha: I know you are frustrated daughter of mine but give her some time.

Me: I’m dying.... (I said on a low tone. This caused Alex to laugh a little and hold my head. “you are far from dying” he said in my head.)

Naidoo: (with her eyes popped out) you accepted the bond aloud. Prince you shouldn't have.

Alex: (Alex started to feel the hit) why? She is my soulmate, tell me why you'd say that.

(Naidoo kept quiet.)

Alex: talk. Now.

Luna: she is scared.

Alex: of what? Mellisa? Me?

Luna: I don't know son. Let's give her sometime.

Alex: time? Come on mom.

Me: what if she doesn't speak till forever? We can't wait for her to decide when to tell us what is

wrong.

Alpha: it looks like we don't have a choice. How about we go and sleep on it maybe tomorrow she will be ready.

Me: actually we do. I can get in her mind and see what she saw.

(everyone stood still and looked at me in so much shock and disbelief)

Grace: what did you just say?

Me: I said its chilly out side. ..

(Kutheni uzondibuza into ayivileyo. I walked to Naidoo, when i was about to hold her head she pushed me away and screamed.

"no. No, no. Its her. The abomination we were warned about, the one that shouldn't have been born, she is no pure werewolf but pure evil who attract even bigger evil and the child she is carrying should be terminated because the life of her is the end of us. This is she who was asked from the ancestors and they cursed her with so much power that no werewolf should posses. The more she uses her powers the more she wants more. I would rather die than to let her in my mind for she will learn how to gain more power. I saw it happening. Alex you shouldn't have accepted the bond. You will not get in my head Devil, I will not give you the satisfaction. Kill one to save many. I will be that one, I will sacrifice myself to save my family, when I die she will never know how to consume more power..... Alpha make the hard decision to save your pack. This girl is not one of us, she will never be, cut off her head and hope the head doesn't grow back... because a silver doesn't kill her."

She took out a knife and stabbed herself on the heart.

Everyone was so confused. I held my head as the tears flooded down my cheeks.

"She is still breathing, I can heal her, I can heal her." I said crying because this woman just killed her self in front of me because she believed I was an abomination. When I got close to her the Luna jumped at me and told me not to dare touch her.

Grace: Naidoo was never wrong. Mellisa wants to get in her head and find what she rather die that to show her. This girl is evil.



Alex: how can you say that Grace? She is my mate. The person we all have been waiting for. What's wrong with you people???!?

Alpha: Alex I didn't raise you to be this dumb. You know Naidoo was always right. Hr visions were always correct, you heard your mate saying she can get in her mind. No pure or bitten werewolf has that power. She is what? 20 and turned months ago but I can smell her power, she posses ten times more than she should. I have to make the hard decision.

Alex: you will have to put your only son down first. We accepted the bond. Doesn't that matter to you that her pain is mine? You know what happens when a mate dies, I can't survive that. But you don't care do you?

Luna: she is pregnant Alex, I doubt its your child.

Alex; she had a life before we met and she didn't have a privilege to grow among other werewolves and get to know about mate bond. So whats your point mom? (The Luna kept quiet) let's go MJ...

(He held my hand but his dad shouted In his Animal voice... "you are not going anywhere.")

Alex: are you going to kill me too dad?

Alpha: I will kill everything that threatens ny pack. Which side are you boy?

Me: (I sighed) father-in-law with all due respect I think its for better if you let us go. Nxi thing is; I won't let you cut off my head... I am faster, I am stronger and my mind tricks are improving. Let us leave in peace before I compel you to kill each other.... Now I'm starting to wonder if my mind control is working on pure Alphas.

" and on the other side me is getting really good at this." Said Jessy getting in the house and the ground shaking. I smiled. I loved her character.

"you know Mellisa I thought this is where you going to fit in, where you belong. Why is everyone treating you like a freak?" Jes asked.

"because I am an abomination. 'the one that shouldn't have been born'."

Alex: crap, every supernatural is an abomination.

Jessy: and we are all freaks.

Me: where is my brother? We have to go before I kill someone. I know when I am not wanted.

We got out of the house and went to the hall where we found my brother playing cards with other guys. We brought him up to speed. Alex took a bag with few clothes and food and we all ran to the woods.... "bring me her head" thanks to my 'abnormal' super hearing I heard the Alpha addressing his army. My soulmate's father wanted to kill me. My life couldn't get any interested but all was well cause Alex was right by my side.

Wait, wait, what? Im pregnant. That thought alone made me to stop running and threw up.  
Where was Rick!!!

[03/16, 16:00] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 31

Rick's POV

"Theres this bond I have with Mellisa. I want it gone."

I said. She smiled like she had been waiting for this moment.

"You are the first one she turned? Her bitch?" She said rubbing her hands together.

Me: is it doable or not?

Sarah: there's nothing magic can't fix.

Amanda: why would you want to break the bond? I thought you and Mellisa were inseparate-able.  
Where is she?

Me: hello big sister I missed you more. How are you? Is Aunt Sarah treating you well?

Amanda: you are still a dushbag.

Me: I'm happy you had hope that I will find redemption. Now aunt Sarah can we get to business.  
Thanks for the food, it was delicious.

Sarah: your wish is my command.

Me: where is your husband and your children?

Sarah: they are all at work its just me, Josh and your sister. Why do you ask?

Me: juuust making a conversation .

(we had this lil chat going down stairs. It was just too easy, she was planning something so was I . she and I barely knew each other and we were not in each other's good books. Tell me why would she help me out without hesitation unless she had a hidden agenda. I had to wait until she opened her spell room because it was locked by a spell, only she could open it.

"You didn't ask what do I want. You know nothing is free especial in this country where currency constantly declines" she said opening the door.

"im a patient man aunt. I was waiting for you to say your price." I replied.

"dont worry youll know soon, I'm glad you didn't think this was free."

We got in the room, she took a drop of my blood and mixed it with some herbs and wolfsbane saying it will get rid of the werewolf blood in me and everything will be clearer. I felt my blood burning and some kind of weight leaving my body. I was then disturbed by a familiar spell she was saying out loud.

"what are you doing Sarah?"

Her: be quiet.

It was a control spell, she wanted to control me.

Her: when we are done here we will be family and you will bring me Mellisa James head. I have to make sure I can count on you.

(She then went back to her spell, closed her eyes and got lost in her work. This was an opportunity, I couldn't let her finish the spell. I felt my old self back. I jumped at her, when she opened her eyes and tried to throw me away with her eyes her neck was already broken. I took her heart out while it was still hot and did a transfer spell. I took all her powers. I laughed aloud alone as I felt being myself again. I can't remember when I felt this much power, when I killed someone with no remorse. Damn, it just hit me that the time I spent waiting for orders from Mellisa James were the worst days of my life. The bitch who killed my mother and wiped my memory was gone this made me laugh harder. The greatest evil was back. My only fear was there, the fear of dying. Mellisa James.... I had to find her. I underestimated her the first time

and she bit me and made me her bitch. The bite even fooled me to think I was in love. Rick could never be in love. I was who they feared, who they hid from, who they scared children with when they didn't want to eat or go to school. I was the greatest of them all. The one who had a heart of stone. "RAIN, THUNDERSTORMS, LIGHTNING NOOOOOOW" I yelled so loud and the stars above obeyed my commands just like every living creature should, Mellisa included. She had to bow down to me. I had to complete that immortal spell and kill her for biting me.

When I turned around my sister and little Josh were standing at the door looking at me terrified. Josh peed on his pants, tempted to go to his mother but scared of what I would do.

"Oh sister I am so back... 'With a bang' they say." I said kissing her cheek and left them there. I went outside to admire my work of art. It was raining so hard, the clouds were dark and shouted danger. I sang and danced on the rain. All the time I was with Mellisa I was lost, finding myself and my purpose made everything clear and bitter towards Mellisa. I giggled sarcastically when I think of the things the bond made me say.... "when its broken I will love you still, that's true love nywe nywe" love / bond that was one sided. That was fuckery .... Her black ass was good though....

I told the rain to stop and went back to the house. My clothes were wet, I went to Nicholas bedroom and took off my clothes. I dried myself and went through his closet, he had horrible fashion taste so I proceeded to his son's bad room... Well it wasn't my taste but it was better. I felt my sister's presence in the room. "beloved sister" I said without looking at her.

"What do you think?" I said again and turned around. I was wearing white pants, white shirt, dark brown shoes and navy blazer. It was nice just too serious for my like. I was an all-black kinda guy. Black sent the right message, it defined my character.....

Amanda: you look nice, you are just not yourself.

Me: I know right...

Amanda: you took her powers didn't you?

Me: she wanted to burry me alive.

Amanda: whatever, cause Rick is always right. Do you think you will ever give me back my powers?

Me: I want to I'm just scared you'll turn on me.

Amanda: that's insane when do I ever turn on you Rick! I have always been there even when I shouldn't.

Me: I have to find Mellisa James.

Amanda: damn you Rick ... When is your obsession with this girl going to end? What good does it bring? Last time you went after her she bit you and turned you into her bitch.

Me: that was because I underestimated her, I thought she was just a girl but now I know exactly what I'm working into.

Amanda: how are you going to find her?

Me: I'm a witch, a very powerful witch. I can do a location spell and be shaving at the same time.

Amanda: I want to help. I want to do something... Be something more than just Rick's sister.

Me: you cross me, you are dead.

(I held her head and gave back her powers. She fell asleep immediately. I picked her up and carried her to the car outside. I drove off leaving Josh with his dead mother. When we were far enough, I stopped, my sister was still sleeping. I pulled a map and did a location spell. Got it... I knew where Mellisa was.... The place was blank, there was nothing there, she must be hiding from her demons.....

Nevertheless I was coming for her to take what's rightful mine....her blood. I will complete the spell.

Mellisa James, Rick is on his way

[03/16, 16:00] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 32

Third Person's POV

"Oh my God, my neck." Amanda said waking up and stretching her neck. She looked around, a

little bit surprised by her surroundings because the last time she remembered she was at Nicholas's house. She didn't remember how she got in the car. She closed her eyes, trying to brush sleep off her eyes in attempt to clear her head. What happened before falling asleep came in flashes. She remembered that her little brother gave her powers back. She looked outside but couldn't see her brother. She tried to unlock the car with her eyes trying to test if she really had her magic back. In her surprise the door unlocked. She chuckled a little, ran her fingers through her blonde hair- pushing them to the back. She had a little smile in her face reminiscing about the last time she tasted power, the last time she wasn't scared.

She got out of the car and stood in front of it trying to learn the place. It was quiet as the dark was starting to replace the light. She stood there and just admired the beauty of nature just for a minute and wondered where her brother was. She was then startled by her brother.....

"hello sister, how are you feeling with your magic back?" he said. Amanda turned around and looked at him. All this time Rick was on top of the car, he then folded the map and jumped off the car.

"We have a long way to go. Last time I was on the road with you, you loved driving.... Do you mind?" Rick said giving her car keys. He then walked to front passenger seat, Amanda took the wheel! Wayibiza yasabela! Wayitsho yancipha!

"Where are we heading?" Amanda asked after hours of driving with no hope.

"We are going to some place fun. Keep driving, I will tell you where to stop." The arrogant little brother ordered.

On the other side Mellisa James was throwing thousands of meals as the idea of being pregnant with Rick's baby hit her head. She didn't know what to think, she had no idea what to make out of the situation for she knew that she broke Rick's heart in million pieces when she chose her mate over Rick. There was still a possibility that what she had with Rick was an illusion, it was because of the bite. Nothing was real. Her Mate gave her a bottle of water and ordered her to drink, he held her hand and took her worries and fears. The mate bond was the best gift from moon Goddess to the blood werewolves. Mellisa would have been stupid to throw it away. She drank the water and regained her strength. They continued walking.

On the Royal blood wolves, Luna and Alpha addressed their pack to find Mellisa James ....

“the girl Prince brought to our home is not one of us, she is evil, our executive advisor killed herself trying to protect us from that girl. We all know Naidoo was never wrong, that girl is carrying more evil inside her stomach, I want you to go after her, kill her on sight and everything that stands between her, and your task it should be terminated. Mellisa James should die before she destroys all of us. Bring me her head.”

The Alpha addressed his army.

“Alex is emotional linked to Mellisa, if we kill Mellisa Alex will not survive the pain of losing a mate. We all know no body survives that.” Tyler tried to reason.

“ I know son but I am going to sacrifice my only blood son for you, for my pack and for all other werewolves out there. I know you are doubting me right now but I need you to believe me when I say this girl is dangerous. She can manipulate your mind, plant thoughts in your head, she can even go as far as getting in your mind and see what you have seen. It only takes one touch for her to do that. When you go out there you have to be careful otherwise we will all be mince meat.”

The pack was dismissed, they ran to the woods, following Jessy and Onke's scent. They all changed to their wolf forms. It wasn't long before they found Mellisa, there's was no place to hide, Jessy's and Onke's scent was easily picked. Amanda and Rick were already in the woods, they left their car far as there was no road for cars. This was werewolves territory and they didn't need cars for they had super speed.

Mellisa being an “abomination” which was cursed with so much power that no werewolf should posses could smell the Royal wolves from far. She heard they were getting close. She suggested they sit down and come up with a plan, Onke and Jessy were already dead tired. They sat down, caught some air and scratched their heads for a plan. Mellisa was disturbed by a familiar scent, she looked around as she slowly recalled who the scent belonged to.

Onke: what is it MJ?

Mellisa: its Rick, he is here.

( her heart pounded because there were two possibilities; Rick came as a lover or a fighter. She had no idea which one was it)

Alex: what? No ways, how could he had found out about this place.

Melissa: Rick was a very powerful witch.

Onke: if he is back to the list of 'powerful witch' it means he broke the hold you had over him.

Jessy: lord, this evening couldn't get any worse than a bad big witch showing up to claim her baby mama who is with someone else.

Alex: guys how about we focus on a plan right now and deal with Rick later.

Jessy: alright, I will burry them .. There, done.

Alex: they are werewolves, they can jump like crazy. (looking at MJ) what's wrong? Your eyes, they are no longer red, they are green.

MJ: I don't know.... My wolf wanna come out, Royal blood wolves are here so is Rick....

(Mellisa changed to her white wolf form. Onke climbed on a tree and stayed on top, this was his way of hiding because he couldn't fight back, he must have forgot that they were dealing with werewolves who could smell his scent. Alex also changed in his black shiny fur werewolf form getting ready to fight. Jessy – the blonde earthquake maker was standing between them with her hands on their heads, brushing their fur! She slowly raises her hands causing the earth to vibrate. She was getting stronger by drinking Mellisa blood.

The earth shaking startled Amanda and Rick. "they are here, this is Jessy." Said Rick to his sister.

"look over there, the trees are waving. They must be over there." Amanda said, pointing not far from where they were standing. They picked up their pace.

The Royal blood wolves were not stopped by the mini earthquake instead they dug their palms even faster. When they were close, Jessy lost balance because of anxiety, she caused a hole between them and the wolves but they were wolves, they jumped. The first one jumped at Jessy, she tried to fight back, stopping it from biting her, Mellisa jumped at the one that was attacking Jessy. Alex attacked other wolves but they were out numbers, they were only two wolves against a pack. Alex was in the centre, surrounded by about 10 wolves, all tearing him apart. Mellisa felt part of him being torn apart when she looked up, it was her Prince, she quickly changed in her human form. Funny, she was way stronger and impossible fast when she was in human form. She attacked the ten wolves who were attacking Alex, in seconds, she had two hearts in her hands, she broke two necks within a blink of an eye. Onke was peeing himself on top of the tallest tree.

The wolves let go of Alex and played their attention to Mellisa, they all attacked her at the same time. They came like i tsunami without warning, as strong as she was she couldn't take them all at once. They managed to put her down and claw her!



Rick and Amanda were already there, when they realised that MJ and her pack were being attacked, Rick took a stick and made a sleeping spell, then he broke the stick. All Royal blood wolves were sent to sleep. Including the ones back in Royal house. Rick went to half dying Mellisa and held her neck.

"You will only die by my hand." He said before picking her up. MJ was slowly healing himself. Rick was amazed to see this happening.

"Let's go Sis" Rick said.

Amanda: what about the others? They are going to die if we leave them here.

Rick: do I look like I care? Let's go Amanda, we came here for Mellisa, we got her now its time to go.

Amanda: No Rick, nooo. Why do you have to be a Monster. Mellisa will hate you for this.

Rick : you confuse me with the Rick who cared, the Rick who was controlled by Mellisa. Look me in the eyeball and tell me if you see any humanity.

Amanda bit her lower lip and shook her head. Trapped between going with her brother or helping people she didn't even really know.

"if you are not in the car when I get there I am leaving you. It won't be long before these wolves wake up. With that little magic you have, I doubt you can beat them. Family or strangers? You choose..."

Said Rick and left.

Amanda dragged her feet and followed.

[03/16, 20:15] Ron: DIARY OF A SHE WOLF: CHAPTER 33

10 February 2016 ·Bandezi NS ·27 Comments ·2079 Post Views

3rd Person's POV

Rick was evil but how far could he take it?

Rick carried the naked Mellisa to the car, his sister followed – leaving the Royal blood Prince and Jessy in pains. Onke hugged the tree so tight not knowing what to do, not knowing whether to follow Rick or stay with Jessy, but if he was left behind what was he going to do when the Royal Blood wolves woke up? If he followed Rick he had no idea how he would react as he looked to be in no friendly mode... Onke brushed off the thought of leaving Jessy on a wolf territory.... There was a war in his head, battling between her sister and Jessy... But truth be told MJ could take care of herself she showed that numerous times.

When Rick and his sister disappeared to down the way, Onke quickly got off the tree, still holding on to his cross my heart bag which had his journals.

He ran to Jessy and felt a pulse, she was still so much alive, she was just knocked out. Onke let out a sigh of relief when he learned this. He then went to Rick and saw he was healings a bit... The wolves were not going to be out for a long time, he tried to wake both Rick and Jessy but they both looked to be comfortable where they were, they refused to open their eyes, they were deep in thongo-land. Onke decided to carry Jessy out of the woods, leaving the Prince naked and injured....

“He is the prince, their Prince. No harm will be done to him if he is not protecting Mellisa... This is his territory... If one person has to be left behind he is a perfect candidate.” Onke consoled himself as he left the Prince behind and carried Jessy out of the woods... Its days like these when being slim helps. Their car was still where they left it, he was startled to find Rick seating on top of their car.

“ your car is bigger... I was wondering when you were going to show up.” Said Rick, He then jumped off the car and told Onke to get in with Jessy, when Onke got it he found her sister still sleeping, covered with a blue blazer that Rick was wearing earlier on. Onke chuckled a little thinking for the best. Kakade hope never killed anyone. “if Rick didn’t care about Mellisa he wouldn’t have made sure she is covered and is healing.” Onke thought to him self.

“ when the little she wolf wakes up she is going to need some motivation to behave... And you my friends are that motivation.” Rick said closing the door behind Onke. Amanda was already being the steering wheel, Rick took a front passenger seat and they drove off to where the road led them... Planning to stop at the first beautiful house.... Send the owners to sleep till they leave.

Back on the Royal blood wolves land, the werewolves woke up , they found their Prince badly injured. They decided not to cause any further damage but to bring him home where he

belonged forgetting that he now belong to Mellisa James, he found his mate, he accepted the bond aloud. The two of them will never be separated even by death. He was taken to the Royal medical house, Luna and Alpha were a little broken to see their son like this..... Forgetting it was their deeds.....

On the following Evening

Mellisa's POV

Moon Goddess!! What happened! "Where am I?"

I slowly opened my eyes and lifted my head up. I was in a huge beautiful bedroom, everything was white; covers, closet, wall, curtains, ceiling and the floor- pure white. I was in white sleeping gown. I got out of the bed and went to the window, only to find out it was leading to a balcony! 'what is this place?' I kept asking myself. My last memories before waking up kicked in.... Alex!!!! My brother and Jessy! Oh my God, oh My God.... My heart raced, I ran back to the bedroom and opened the closet, looking for something I could wear, I threw down all the clothes.... Frustrated. I held my head preventing it from exploding, I couldn't find anything to wear, the last time I remember Alex was dying.... I knew he was alive but I had to find him. I had to find my mate, I had to find my Alex. While I was still crazy a door flew open, Rick threw him self in, holding a tray! 'i should have known' I thought before jumping at him with my claws but he threw me down with a single look. He then walked in with so much ego stuck in his throat. He put the tray on top of the drawer beside the bed. He came to me and offered me a hand to help me get up. I read his eyes, the only thing he was on the look out for was my claws and a bite! I had a surprise for him, I was an unpredictable bitch, I kicked him on the balls as he was standing on top of me with his legs wide open and balls exposed. "bitch" he said before giving me another massive headache. I howled.

He stopped and told me I had to eat.

"are you going to get off your butt or should I make you?" He said slowly going to sit on the bed.

I rolled my eyes knowing for sure he was going to bully me around with his magic if I didn't do as he said, I was starving anyway. I got up and ate.

Rick: the colour of your eyes changed...

Me: is that a question? I don't know anything about my eyes cause I can't see my eyes hello!

Rick: I was just being curious. Finish up, we have a long journey ahead.

Me: where is my Bother?

Rick: downstairs.

(He then left... I ate and went to the closet again. I took blue jeans, black sneakers, white T-shirt and black biker jacket. I got dressed and went downstairs, I found everyone except Alex. I looked at my brother and Jessy and winked at them, I tried to hold myself even though I felt Like lashing out at ask how the fuck was everyone here but my mate wasn't.

Me: where is Alex?

Rick: Alex is a lucky man isn't he, you don't ask how your brother is or your friends... You don't even care how you got here or what you are doing here. All you care about is Alex! Oh poor thing.

Me: I wasn't talking to you Rick. .... Onke, where is he?

(My wolf was scratching to be set free. Some how I was failing to control my anger. I looked my self on the mirror that was opposite me, I saw the colour of my eyes.... I slowly touched my eye bags! Bright Green eyes! What did they mean? Did they mean I was no longer an Alpha? I took a deep breath. I closed my hands to a fist as I felt my claws growing..... All of a sudden my blood was boiling, I got sweaty then I sat on the couch unwillingly. It was like I was going to die right there and then, I looked up at Rick and found a smug smile on his pale face. He stopped boiling my blood.

Rick: I broke the bond Mellisa, as promised I came for you. Tell me, how does it feel; one minute you are in charge and the next minute, you are a bitch.

Me: (I grasped for air before speaking) you would know since you were the most powerful witch and the next thing you were my bitch, licking my ass.

(I must have hit the nerve, he broke the glass he was holding, he smiled a little and looked at my brother. Onke started to cough blood.)

Me: Rick stop, stop... Please stop.

(I yelled holding my brother. He was this close from dying)

Rick: I underestimated you but now i know exactly the kind of devil you are. So behave yourself Mellisa or I will take my anger on your brother.... Remember he doesn't heal, when I kill him it will be the end of him. No tricks or he dies.... Are we clear? (I kept quiet) ARE WE CLEAR? (He shouted, giving Onke a headache, he bled through his mouth, noise and ears.)

Me: yes, yes we are clear. We are clear Rick. Please stop hurting my brother. Please.

Rick: that's more like it. You didn't ask me how I am now that I am not your bitch... HUUUUUUU

(he let out a victory scream. I put my brother on my lap and wiped off the blood. I noticed something, Jessy had been sitting on the couch and not moving.... Very strange)

Me: what have you done with Jessy?

Rick: I made her to stay still and not move. She talks too much, I didn't want to be disturbed. Today is a blood fullmoon baby, I'm finishing what I came here for. I am finishing the immortal spell. My sister will be here so.... (The front door opened) oh speaking of the devil.

Amanda: hello brother, what have you been up to? Millisa James! Ohhhh come on Rick, let Jessy free... She must be hungry.

Rick: do you have everything I asked for? Isn't she cute?

(He took the baby from Amanda,she also had a suit case which I guessed it had a snake)

Amanda: everything is sorted, we are only waiting for midnight.

(She smiled and closed the door by flipping her hand! She had her powers back! Mhla safa!! SHE put down the suitcase and went to the fridge. She took out a Apple and came to sit on the couch next to Jessy. "you may move now." She said waving her hand on Jes's face! Wothuka uJessy like she Was woken up from an awful dream.

Rick put a seal on the house making sure no one leave. I fed Onke my blood, he was healing. Jessy ate and all this time Rick was dancing to classic Jazz music. )

Me: how are you feeling buddy? (I asked my brother still holding him)

Onke: much better. (He smiled)

Rick: its almost time....

Amanda: I can't wait... You know MJ you should take this as a gift... You are giving us a gift that not even our ancestors was able to grant us. You are a true blessing Mellisa James.

(Jessy laughed so hard at this)

Amanda: (irritated) what's so funny blondey

Jess: blondey is your ass.

Rick: right back at you Amanda, see why I prefer to shut her the hell up with a spell?

Jessy: you know, both of you are retards ... It must be in your genes... You claim to be powerful witches but you can't even see Mellisa is carrying your flesh and blood. Go ahead, torture her and the people she lives, why font you? And she will gladly you and heir . Now I said my piece, do your witch juju and shut me up all you want.....hahahaha morons.

(She laughed so hard as the look on Rick and Amanda's face was totally priceless! The shock and confusion was indescribable)

#Power or family

[03/16, 20:27] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 34

Jessy: you know, both of you are retards ... It must be in your genes... You claim to be powerful witches but you can't even see Mellisa is carrying your flesh and blood. Go ahead, torture her and the people she loves, why don't you? And she will gladly give you and heir . Now I said my piece, do your witch juju and shut me up all you want.....hahahaha morons.

(She laughed so hard as the look on Rick and Amanda's face was totally priceless! The shock and confusion was indescribable)

Amanda: Mellisa is pregnant!! ( she asked looking at Rick. I pay no attention to them, I keep nursing my brother)

Rick : (he chuckles) its a trick. They would say anything to save themselves.

Jes: do a spell and see for yourself.

Rick: shut up Jessy, just shut the hell up. (He shouted, brushing his head. I only glanced at them and kept quiet)

Rick: look Mellisa, these kinda tricks work only on normal ex boyfriends, not guys like me, the

ones who slept with you only because they were under a spell. Now, speak ... Are you pregnant??

Me: it doesn't matter Rick, you are not a normal ex boyfriend, you only slept with me because of the hold I had over you. Now life goes on.

Amanda: you are not answering the damn question Mellisa! (She yelled)

Me: yes, I'm pregnant. Now what? Its not like we will be this big happy family.

Rick: the only thing I like about you is your pretty brains. You guessed it right; this changes nothing. We are finishing the immortal spell tonight.

Amanda: don't be a fool Rick this changes everything.

Rick: I am not going to give her the satisfaction. (He said going up stairs)

Amanda: don't throw away your chances of being a father because Melliaa bruised your ego.... Your pride is going to be the end of you. You'll not kill Mellisa.

(Amanda tried to reason running after her little brother. They disappear upstairs. Pregnancy was the least of my worries. I had to find Alex. My brother was getting better. OK, this pregnancy thing was my only chance of getting outta that place. I walked to the door but I couldn't get out. It was still sealed. Then I walked back to the lounge, I paced up and down.)

Jessy: calm down MJ ... Rick isn't going to hurt us, you... You are carrying his child.

Me: (I looked at her and smiled) is that why you told him? You thought it could save us?

Jessy: I know it will save us.

Me: never be sure when it comes to Rick.... But don't worry, we will beat this, together.

Jessy: you'll find a way out.

"Mellisa, Mellisa" a voice said in my head. It was Alex, I didn't know we could telepath even when we were not in the same place. I smiled and put a hand on my stomach. I laughed and used a couch to balance, tears ran down my cheeks. I started sniffing.

"Thanks Moon Goddess, I was worried sick about you" I said telepathically. Jessy kept asking if I was alright but I asked her to give me a minute.

"I was worried sick about you too. I am happy you are alive. Where are you baby"

Me: I don't know, Rick has me, Jessy and my brother. He wants to use all my blood to create an immortal spell.

Alex; what? Does he know you are pregnant?

Me: he knows, he stormed out of the room after hearing about it. I don't know what will happen to me.

Alex: Bhabha... Ask Jessy or Onke to hurt you and howl, I will feel your pain, I will hear your painful howl and it will lead me straight to you. Nothing is going to happen to you Mellisa.

Me: he is going to kill you Alex, this person is a monster. He won't think twice to kill you.

Alex: I will catch him off guts, he will not know what came to him...

Me: I'm sorry baby

Alex: MJ don't do this

(I blocked him on my mind, I couldnt lead my mate kumlomo wengonyama not when I was in my right senses. I looked up and found Jessy staring at me.)

Jes: are you okay...freak James? What was that?

Me: lol better be a freak than a bitch. Alex and I are mind linked.

Jes: what do you mean....

Me: we can telepath

Jes: oh my God that's so cool. I think its better to be a freak you know .

Me: lol its the best thing in the world.

Jes: so is the prince coming to our rescue?

Me; Rick will kill him.

Jes: so?

(I looked at her with my eyes popped open)

Jes: lol I'm sorry. I forget about the mate bond.



(The evil siblings came back and asked me to go upstairs with them. When I got to the room they led me to the room where there was a pyramid drawn on the floor and signs drew on the sides. It was just like how I saw it in Rick's head. They ordered me to get inside of the pyramid, I did as told. They took a 20L bucket, stabbed the snake and let it bleed in the bucket. I wondered how did Rick convince Amanda. They did this together, no other words were exchanged, I felt my heart beating as they took the new born baby. She didn't even cry... They must have spelled her not to cry. I looked away when Rick put up a sharp knife... I couldn't look at it. I didn't want to see it with my naked eyes. It was horrible. It sent shivers down my spine, I became cold. If he could do this it meant he didn't care about our baby, he was going on with the immortal spell. He chose power over his baby. He chose to live forever over being a father. Everything in me hated Rick, I wanted to kill him right there and then, but he'd throw me down with a single stare. He was damn powerful, to beat him you didn't need power you needed strategy. But I beat him once now he was always on his guts. This made me howl painfully, the heartache was unbearable.

He came to me and slit both my wrists. It didn't hurt, he then put the bucket beneath my bleeding wrists. I looked at him, he looked back at me; our eyes locked. I saw anger in his eyes, above everything he was going on with the spell because I hurt him when I bit him, I made him feel he was weak. He hated my betrayal. Bleeding me dry probably hurt him more than it hurt me. The process was taking forever, he decided to slit my arms multiple times so that I could bleed faster, I felt getting weaker and weaker, when everything was blurry they took my blood, Rick sat me behind the door and gave me a bottle of water. He held my head and helped me drink. In the meantime Amanda was finishing off what they started. All of a sudden there was fire coming out of the bucket! The fire was bright green just like the colour of my eyes. Amanda screamed... "my eyes, Rick I can't see" and Rick's eyes were bleeding. He ran to the bathroom. Amanda ordered the fire to stop but it got worse. I was completely healed which was very strange because the healing process usually took a little longer. I got out and ran downstairs.

Onke: what's going on Mellisa?

Me: we have to get out of here.

Jes: how? the house is sealed remember?

Me: if there's no house there will be no seal. Take the house down Jessy. I don't know what's going on up there but it won't hold for long....

(Jessy put her best shot. Everything was vibrating, Onke and I fell down as the windows broke, floor and wall cracked. She was this close but she became weaker, she couldn't go any further. She fell down. Her nose was bleeding)

Jessy: I can't

Onke: its okay Jessy, don't kill yourself... Stop, Jessy stopped. (He got up and went to hold her)  
MJ push the walls down! Now!

(I loved the way he said it. It showed how much confidence he had in me. It was music to my ears, the song I'd put on repeat, it was like a booster! The walls were badly cracked. My speed and strength were on another level. My powers grew, I don't know how but I could feel it. I pushed the walls down and the seal was broken, we ran out. When we were at the gate, I was surprised to see Alex in a car, he stopped, we got it.

"You howled in pain" he said, I kissed him. Then we drove off.

"The colour of my eyes changed, my blood couldn't finished the spell, instead they got hurt, what was more strange is; the colour of the fire was bright green just like my eyes.... What's happening to me." I said. Everyone was dead quiet.

Jessy: everything is strange about you... Why are you still surprised?

Me: jessy this is serious.

Onke: its probably because of the pregnancy. Is there something called a 'witch wolf' think about it.... You are a pure werewolf, carrying an original witch. Your blood can't be dominated, and its blood also can't be dominated because it's pure, no sins it has committed. Both lines are super strong, you and the kid will have to be both Witch and werewolves.

Alex: where did you read about that OJ? Because all I know is that one can't be a witch and a wolf.

(OJ rolled his eyes and looked out side the window)

Jessy: haha go OJ he is making it up...

Onke: what ever... But think about it guys, maybe they couldn't be both witches and wolves because they were not like Mellisa.... Sis Bae is different, she is an extraordinary she wolf. Alex have you ever seen a wolf with bright green eyes, who can do mind control? No.... Maybe she will be a first witchwolf...

Me: but that doesn't explain how my child is going to end werewolf species ... I need to take a rest from all this bullshit you know.

I'm so sorry for not posting last night... I will make it up to you 📄<3 📄<3

[03/16, 20:29] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 35

Onke: what ever... But think about it guys, maybe they couldn't be both witches and were wolves because they were not like Mellisa.... Sis Bae is different, she is an extraordinary she wolf. Alex have you ever seen a werewolf with bright green eyes, who can do mind control? No.... Maybe she will be a first witchwolf...

Me: but that doesn't explain how my child is going to end werewolf species ... I need to take a break from all this bullshit you know.

Alex: you really should rest, you are going to be a mother... You shouldn't be running around.

Me: its hard not to run around when everyone wants a piece of you.

Jessy: its fascinating being you. You know?

Me: being hunted down like an animal is fascinating? Wow

Jessy: I wouldn't put it that way but it still does it for me....

(I just glanced at her and focused back on the road. Alex held my hand and brushed it with his thumb. We spent the day and the evening on the road, driving only Moon goddess knew where. )

Onke: you guys do understand that we can't be on the road forever right? In case you forgot, you are riding with a human; I get hungry and tired. I don't know about you supernaturals.

Jessy: where exactly are we going? OJ is right, we need to rest...

Me: ebengasoze angabi right kaloku kuwe haha (I said looking at my brother, he blushed and looked out side the window, which made Jessy curious)

Jessy: you know I don't understand a word you just said.

Me: lol I was saying you are right?

Jessy; oh? Is that why Onke is blushing?

Me: pretty much!

(She pulled my dreadlocks without a warning and I screamed. She laughed... "right back at you bitch" she said. I decided not to entertain her game because it was going to disturb Alex who was driving. We pulled over on the next garage. The time was after ten. It was dark and all of us were terrible tired and hungry.)

Alex: (looking at the x-tray) its empty. And the car ran out of petrol.

Jessy: Lord!!! (She threw her hands in the air) fuck me right now...

OJ: right here in the car??

(Alex and I laughed so hard at this but Jessy didn't find the humour. She frowned which caused us to laugh even harder)

OJ: I'm sorry I didn't mean to offend you.

Jessy: you didn't offend me... I'm just think about the possibilities of fucking here, right now with werewolves as our audience. It would be memorable don't you think?

OJ: ( blushing like a teen girl,he then let out a soft chuckle! Watching your big brother being charmed and going speechless has to be one of the most hilarious things ever.) Dont you wanna get out of here!

Alex: (trying so hard to stop laughing) guys we are in the middle of a crisis here.

Jessy: can't we have a five minutes break? This car is suffocating.

OJ: and why on earth is sister Bae not doing her thing, mind control the dude to think you have given him the cash or something....

Me: ndikuthanda ngoku bhadla oku me mntaka mama...

OJ: hahaha zinto Zam ezo but right now ndifuna ukuyosibetha, rhaaa ndayigqibela nini kaloku worse zange ndayiva eyongamla!

(Moon Goddess knows I couldn't help myself from laughing hard. I covered my mouth feeling like Jessy could understand what OJ said. I was so embarrassed on behalf of my brother! Stars above when the hell did Onke start being dirt. I couldn't even say a word ,he winked at me as they got out of the car. Alex was just like Jessy, kumnyama tshu! They both couldn't understand Xhosa. Haha but the had to understand that England is very far to have to speak English 24/7.

Only I and Alex were left in the car. Jessy and Onke went in side the garage. I called a guy to help us.... He leaned on my window giving me an opportunity to touch his hand. " I hope your cash is loose" he said looking at me like I am not sitting next to my man. I touched him... When I got in his head it was different from how it usually was when I got in other people's heads. As I tried to plant a thought in his head, flashes of his childhood kept districting me. I was like a summery of his life and the most parts he thought of! It was very weird and destructing. I finally snapped out of his memories... And told him that we paid for a full tank and he can keep the change. "thank you so much for the change." He said before doing his job.

Alex: are you alright my love?

Me: yes baby I'm alright thanks.

Alex: you know I feel it when you are bothered. You can never hide anything from me.

Me: lol hahaa ouch the bond. Ummm

Alex: what is it my love?

Me: when I got in his head, it was different. I saw what I wasn't looking for, I saw his life! Usually I see what I want to see. So many things are changing, I am changing, I have grown more powerful but I sometimes feel like I can't control myself, Rick and Amanda couldn't finish the spell in stead they got hurt..... Something is wrong with me Alex.

Alex: nothing is wrong with you my love. You are pregnant of a witch child, it would be very strange if you didn't show any changes. (He said driving to the parking lot)

Me: right.

Alex: yhea... ( he looked at me and leaned over. I met him half way for a kiss. He planted a soft baby kiss on my lips. I smiled as I inhaled his mint scent which reminded me of the first time I met him. When I got lost in his gaze. Mate bond has to be the most wonderful gift from the mother above. Humans spend their entire lives trying to find "the one" on the other side we are given our soul mates by a silver platter. "i need to get water. I'm thirsty." I said to bae. "they sell water inside. Haha I wonder what's taking Jessy and Onke so long." Alex said...

Me: yhuuu I had even forgotten about them....

(We got out of the car and locked it. We held hands and chit chat on our way to the garage. "you still hadn't told me how you survived the attack." I said, swinging our locked hands.

"my 'pack' took me to the royal house, I contacted you as soon as I recovered." He told.

Me: how were your parents?

Alex: umm I don't know my love. I saw sadness in their eyes but their pride couldn't let them admit they were wrong. They didn't try to stop me when I told them I was going after you.

Me: shame it must be hard for them... Their trusted advisor died protecting them from whom they should call Princess.

Alex: well, they should have at least gave you a chance to see for themselves what kind of a person you are.... What they did makes me sick! Just because they saved me it doesn't erase all the scars... Mxm saving me from the pain they caused.

Me: I'm sorry babe. I'm sorry I brought drama in your peaceful home.


Alex: you didn't do anything my love.... Do you want spring water or flavoured?

Me: spring please.

Alex: you'll have to do your thing ...

( he threw me the bottled of water. I catch it. We both laughed at the same time, I winked at him and walked to the till but then I remembered something. I stopped and looked at him;

Me: baby did you see any sign of Onke or Jessy....

(He looked around and shook his head. "Haibo baphi na?" I thought out loud. "didn't the go out?" said Alex as we were looking around, we went to the toilets but they were not there, we went out side to the car....they were not there. I called out both their names but no one responded. My wolf was starting to lose it. I was panicking, my heart was pounding. Alex and I went back in side the garage, we asked around if they haven't seen a mid height black guy along with a very blonde girl who has her arms covered in tattoos. Everyone saw them getting inside but they didn't see them getting out. I compelled the security guy to show me their CCTV , we looked at it... I could see my brother and Jessy going in the guys toilet, holding hands and giggling but they never came out. Worse; there were no cameras in side the toilets! I ran back to the toilets but they were just not there. Alex entered after me and held me from behind! The anxiety slowly decreased. "they should be here!!! What if something bad happened?" I said, a choking lump grew in my throat, I turned around and buried my face on Alex's chest. He held me tight and kissed the top of my head. " calm down babe, let's look for clues of what happened.... We can track their scent remember?" he said so calmly... I channelled his calmness. I got better in minutes... He was Moon sent 3

I sighed and broke the hug. I cover my eyes with one hand. We couldn't call the police because of the reputation my parents left us with... I tried to sniff for their scent but it was like they just vanished!

"Do you get anything?" I asked my Alex.

"no honey, its like no one was ever here. Something is wrong. Its either they are blocking our scent tracking ability or they wiped off the scent." He noted out.

"whatever it is... Its working."

Alex: this isn't happening, two grown ups can't just disappear....

Me: unless if they are taken.

[03/16, 20:30] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 36

We went back to the car and waited, hoping and praying to Moon Goddess above for this to be a prank. Jessy and OJ to be somewhere and laughing. I sat on the back seat and hugged my knees thinking of the worst case scenarios .... Sitting there and hoping they would show up was stupid but hope never killed anyone. I couldn't sleep a blink, I saw the sun rising with my two naked eyes. Alex looked worried about me more than the missing kids. Imini yaqina mntaka bawo but my brother was no where to be found. I could feel my head cracking! We went inside the garage hoping the results would be different this time but we came out with zero success. I started sobbing, not knowing what to do.

" they will not hurt them. Whoever took them wants to get to you. Soon they will make contact." Alex said giving me a bone crush hug.

"I can't just sit around and wait for them to make contact! I need to find my brother and Jessy. My brother can't even fight back, why didn't they take me in stead?" I said between sobs.

"Because they know you care about them. Isn't how this game is played? They take someone close to you to get under your skin, to make you vulnerable and then make their move. Damn Naidoo, we would be in our home, with our family if she didn't say what she said. This all wouldn't have happened." He brushed my locks.... I looked at him and planted a kiss on his left cheek. I then walked in the car. I sat on the front passenger seat and looked out side the window trying to think what happened. Alex was standing out side the car, admiring fresh air.

I played with my nails waiting for something above to just drop in and tell me my brother is alive but I have to give them 20 litres of my blood or my left lung to free my brother and Jessy. I yawned, I can't remember the last time I had a good sleep. I tried to sleep on the seat and my sleep didn't take long even though I was bothered. It knocked me off almost immediately.

Just when I was starting to be comfortable, when I was starting to drift off from reality, I was woken up by a loud bang on the door of the car! "fuuuuck" I said holding my head trying to bring myself to what was happening. I got out of the car, in my surprised I found Rick and Alex fighting like old cows! I just stood there, folded my arms and watched. Alex was beating the shit out of Rick and Rick wasn't using his magic to fight back. "enough." I shouted, Rick was bleeding profusely. Alex stooped punching him. Rick got up and wiped his bleeding nose.

"The Prince has some anger going on there but I understand I knocked off his Princess. I would

be just as angry mate." The cocky, devil and irritating Rick was so back. He said with a naughty smile.

"I'm not here to fight Mellisa. I need us to talk like future parents you know." He added shrugging his shoulders. I wish I could know her parents! Who the fuck gave birth to this guy.

"i think I liked you better when you were my bitch." I said walking to him.

"honey, I still have my powers I'm just not here to fight.... Don't make me boil your blood or drop you down with a single look." He said.

"will that be before or after I bite you?" I sped to him, he gave me his famous stare but nothing happened in stead he bent down, screaming and holding the sides of his head.

"what just happened" I asked looking at Alex with my eyes popped out.

He shrugged his shoulders and said, "i think what he was trying to do to you attacked him in stead." Alex said. I look at him like how the fuck is that even possible then we both look at my stomach. "the baby." We both said at the same time and let out a questioning look but once more I was reminded that Onke wasnt there to give us his funny made up theories! Wait, wait maybe Rick can be some help, he is a powerful witch, he can find them. Yes he can find them. Now for a change I was happy his cocky self was there.

"bitch! Did you just give me a taste of my own medicine? How did you do that?" He said getting up and looking dizzy.

Me: what do you want Rick? Last time I saw you your eyes were bleeding out.

Rick: I almost lost my sight, thanks to my excessive magic from Sarah and all those I have killed. What happened back there Mellisa? The magic fire that looked just like your eyes!!!

Me: do you want me to answer that? If you weren't so evil that all would have been avoided.

Rick: what are you child?

Alex: a she wolf you tried to killed in more than one occasion.

Rick: oh Prince is it the bond that makes you to speak on her behalf? What happens when the bond is broken?



Alex: Nxii thing is ; it can never be broken not even by death. You know what? I think you are two old for this game where you pretend to hate Mellisa because she hurt your balls. Stop being an ass, you are not the only person who is in love with someone's soul mate..... Hurting her hurts you even more, even a fool can see it in your eyes.....

(By the look of things my man hit a nerve. Rick just kept quiet and looked away.)

Me: what do you want Rick? Maybe we can help each other...

Rick: my sister, she lost her sight. I threatened her to do the spell. I left her with no choice. I was so mad at you MJ.

Me: what do you want me to do?

Rick: heal her; give her sight back. Please. I owe my sister, I know I don't deserve your empathy, I dont deserve your forgiveness, reason why I'm not your mate is because even the ancestors saw that I don't deserve you, I'm broken, I'm angry to my self and to the world, I am evil, I have no messy and I seek no redemption. But my sister is nothing like me, it should have been me who lost his sight. Not her. She has been there from when we were young sleeping in the street, she always took care of me, but I threw it in her face every chance I got. After this I'm going to leave you alone. Please heal Amanda, she doesn't deserve this.

Me: I will do that but you have to do something for me first because both you and Amanda can't be trusted I mean she did beg me to kill you, that's no sign of a good sister to me. She is just as power hungry as you are.

Rick: trust me, if she wanted me dead then I deserved it. She is good I just keep pushing her.

Alex: wow...

Rick: now what do you want me to do for you to heal my sister?

Me: my brother and Jessy are missing do a location spell to find them.

Rick: what??! All this time we are babbling about nonsense Onke is missing? Why didnt you say Mellisa! Huh? Damn it, why didnt you say? (He shouted)

Me: ow-kay

Rick: This is Onke we are talking about, the poor thing can't even fight back to save his life.

( he shouted going to his car. Looking frustrated. Alex and I looked at each other totally surprised by Rick's reaction to the news. When did Onke start to be Rick's favourite person? I asked this telepathically. "beat me" said Alex. We looked at each other and smiled. Rick came back with a map. He ordered us to stop smiling, the skies are grey and get our butts in the car.

Rick: when did this happen? If anyone is to bully Onke its me... And me alone.

(We got in the car and Rick did a location spell, using my blood to connect with Onke. But nothing happened. "i can't find him. They are under a protection spell. They can't be found." He said, devastated.

Alex: whoever took them is probably watching us.

Rick: what about their scent...

Me: it ends when they get in the bathroom.... After that it's clean.

Rick: this has to be a witch. What exactly happened MJ? Where were you two? Don't tell me you were shagging while your brother disappeared right in front of you.

Me: thanks Rick that makes me feel so much better.

Alex: don't be a douchebag Rick, you need MJ more than we need you.

Rick: do you want me to apologise!

Me: no need. No we were not shagging, they were actually the ones who went to get some. They got in the bathroom and never came out.

Rick: I can't find them in the map. They are blocked! Damn it! Damn it....

Alex: whoever took them wants Mellisa, they will make contact.

Rick: when? Do you suggest we stay here and wait for them? What if they want to break Mellisa because they know damn well that to break her you have to kill her brother!

Alex: do you have a better plan?! We looked everywhere.

Rick: alright, alright, wait.... Lemme think.... Alright! Mellisa! Aish what am I trying to say.... Its there but I don't know how to put it to you.

Me: what are you thinking?

Rick: can't you like... Ummm get in side the garage! Walk to the bathroom and see what happened.

Me: what! I am not capable of doing that.

Alex: no, no, no Rick is onto something here.... Remember you touched that guy last night and you saw a summary of his life. What if you can do that to places, you can touch it and see what happened there....

Rick: damn you have gotten stronger...

Me: you have no idea, its worth the shot.

( we got out of the car and went inside the garage. The sun was already saying its goodbyes. We

went to the toilet and put a "out of order" sign so that we can not be disturbed. I had no idea of what I was doing. "you can do this my love. Just relax." Alex said in my head. I smiled a little, our eyes locked. "now is not a good time mates." Rick protested. "Close your eyes and zone out of reality." Alex whispered in my head. I couldn't help but giggle. "you are destructing me baby, get out of my head." I said out loud.

"why don't you block me?" he said telepathically, I exhaled and looked at him with pleading eyes. Rick was bored to dead.

"ok I won't bother you gain" said Alex.

"thank you."

I said and closed my eyes again. I concentrated on going back in time and see what happened. I thought of my brother. I prayed to Mood Goddess above to show me what happened to my brother. I got knocked out of what felt like a dream by someone opening the door, it was Jessy and Onke.... They were kissing. I was there but they couldn't see me. I must have went back to yesterday. They locked the door, took off their clothes fast and shagged! I saw everything... Thixo isn't there a way to fast forward this part cause it not what I came here for!

They had the wildest sex! No wonder people fancy blonde girls. They are freaks. When they were done eating the forbidden fruit they stood next to the base and kissed. Something made noise, Jessy asked if Onke heard it.... They both looked around terrified then everything went blank!

I was snapped back to life. I breathed out as I found Rick's devil eyes and Alex's calm adorable eyes piercing through mine. I ran out side to the car. They followed.

"Did it work" Rick asked worried.

"i saw them having a wildest sex that not even Christian Grey and Anna are capable of. Then everything was black. I don't know if that's helping."

Alex: fuck

(I looked at him and smiled)

Alex: what?

Me: you don't use such words

Alex: its call Melliaa effects.

Rick: will you guys stop being horny for a minute? What now?

Me: we wait... Where is your sister?

Rick: she is in the car. She must be hungry.

Me: I'm hungry too.

Rick: let's go and get them something to eat.

(He said looking at Alex. They both got out of the car and told me not to disappear... We laughed. "its too soon guys" I said thinking of Trevor Noah. They laughed and went to the garage. I slept on my back and touched my tummy! God! You could see the bump ... I was showing already! Wasn't it too soon to show! I wondered what my child was going to be, I wondered if what Onke said about being a witchwolf was true... What if he was right? How was I going to run around with a small baby? How was I go to rise a kid on the run? I was a mess, I didn't have a home. "we will find a way baby. We will do right by the little one." I was startled by Alex in my head. "are you listening to my thoughts? Stay the hell out of my head Alex.." i said in my head.

"i love listening to your thoughts princess. Prison me if I'm breaking rules."

He told. I laughed. When I was going to reply I was totally distracted by Jessy and Onke banging the window. I got out of the car... Alex and Rick were approaching us.

Me: oh my God where have you been? We have been worried sick about you. Where have you been for almost 24 hours. (I yelled)

Onke: why do you have to know every move we make? You such a control freak ever since you got these powers, you think you are God.

Me: fuck you OJ! I was worried sick from the bottom of my stomach because I fucken care about you two. Where were you? Are you OK? I'm glad you are alive! I thought you were kidnapped!

(I tried to get closer to hug them but they both brushed me off at the same time.)

Jessy: why the hell is Rick here? Didn't he try to kill you? Are you shagging him again?

Alex: watch your tone Jessy... What's wrong with you two.

Onke: we are sorry, we are just tired. We are going to ride in our car, MJ and your mate can ride with Rick. We are stopping on the next house we come across.

(They got in the car and drove off leaving us with our eyes and mouths wide open! We looked at each other puzzled.)

Rick: what the hell was that?

Alex and I both shrugged our shoulders, looking defeated.

[03/16, 20:31] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 37

Onke's POV

Jessy and I went to the car and drove off leaving Mellisa, Rick and Alex confused. I looked at my review mirror and saw them driving behind us. Rick being here was going to change things, it was going to make our work to be a little difficult because he was a paranoid son of a bitch who was always on his toes.

"They are following us." Jessy said.

"Good. Remember not to let Mellisa touch you." I told.

"How can I forget"

It was like I was there but I wasn't there! Like I was watching myself talking and driving. I couldn't really feel myself. The only thing in my mind was the rules we were given.

1. Do not let Mellisa touch you.
2. Take her to some house, make her feel comfortable
3. Find a perfect moment and Drive this silver knife through her heart and not take it out. Don't miss.

Those were the rules, they were the only thing ringing in my head. I had to kill Mellisa, she shouldn't be alive! I couldn't snap out of the thought of killing my beloved little sister. Deep down somewhere in me I knew I didn't want to kill her but every inch in my body wanted her dead, it was the only thing in my head! It was the only thing I was breathing for... To kill Mellisa James...

Will my sister ever see happiness? Maybe killing her is for the best to all of us.... So they told me! A lot had happened! You must be wondering what ....

\*\*\*\*\*flash back about 24 hours ago\*\*\*\*\*

"hahaha zinto Zam ezo but right now ndifuna ukuyosibetha, rhaaa ndayigqibela nini kaloku worse zange ndayiva ekangamla!" I said to my sister before getting out of the car! She looked at

me a little embarrassed like Jessy could understand what I had just said. MJ laughed and covered her mouth with her right hand. I winked at her and closed the door. It was almost midnight but thanks to street lights cause it was like a day light! Jessy also got out of the car, her eyes fixed on me as an attempt to bully me on telling her what my sister and I were talking about. I looked at her and smiled a little before letting out a little soft laugh!

“You are not going to tell me what you and your sister were talking about?” she asked as we entered the garage...

“wouldnt you wanna know?”

I said before pinning her against a toilet door, a guy working at the garage said something but neither of us paid attention! I didn't even hear what he said I was busy paying my undivided attention on kissing Jessy, her lips were soft and wet.... Turn on for a bro... When the guy walked to us, I opened the bathroom door without breaking the kiss. We got in and locked it, he knocked and knocked then decided to go away. Jessy giggled at this. She pushed me against the wall and kissed me so hungrily, biting me in the process! The pain went to my already aroused anaconda and made it even more hungry. I held her butt and lifted her up, she wrapped her legs around my waist. I took her hoody and T-shirt off then I turned and put her against the wall. She unwrapped her legs around me and took her jeans off, I was also stripping so fast like I was running out of time. You already know how much I had been drooling over Jessy, dying to get my hands on her and I hadn't fucked in a very long time. My sister and I had been on the run for more than six months! That's hell of a long time.

I loved that Jessy was shorter than me! I lifted her up and bit her neck, she showed more of it, I kissed it while squeezing her butt, she wrapped her legs around my waist like before and took my cock and rubbed it against her clit! She had her eyes closed and moaning a little. She kept tantalizing me, rubbing my cock around her clit and not putting my thing in! This sent me over the edge, I was horny beyond measure, no scientific word could explain it, she saw I was dying and laughed a little then pushed it in her warm honey spot... Slowly..... I started breathing heavily! I felt every inch of it getting in, I slowly moved my waist back and forth! I rocked back and forth, it got warmer I picked up the pace as we were getting there. There I mean we were getting there bro! My eyes were closed, I was on another planet. She was trapped between me and the wall so she couldn't move ! I pinned her hands on top of her head, I had full access to every corner of her pussy as her legs were wrapped around my waist! I fucked her till she pronounced my Xhosa name correctly for the very first time!

I thought that was fun and long but I had no idea what I was in for! After we both came, I let go of her hands and just hugged her! She unwrapped her legs, we kissed passionately and very slowly!

She turned the tables around and took charge! It has always been my weakness a girl who is actively involved when fucking! Not these roasted chicks !!!

She pushed me against the wall and kissed me from my neck, nipples, stomach and knelt down between my legs! Gosh how much i loved being given a head and our black girls aint about this shit kodwa bona do wanna be muffed! Mxee ...My cock was already pointy, she held it with both her hands, she looked at me with her sexy mlungu eyes and gave me a hand job, she pushed back her hair before taking all my cock in her mouth! Yooo I roared like a lion! She sucked it all around, ndithi ndisamamele leyo she played with the tip of her tongue on the top of my cock, she made it in circles! Thixo onofefe I spoke in tongues! I grabbed the back of her head and pressed it on and I pounded in and out in her mouth. She pulled out when I was about to cum! She led me in front of the mirror, turned around and looked at the mirror. I stood behind her and kissed her neck looking at our reflections... She smiled and bent over, hanging her right leg on the basin... I ate her from behind! She ordered me to hold her hair and fuck her like a dirty slut. She spoke so dirty and that turned me on. I put her legs together and grabbed her hips as I rocked in and out in circles. Hungrily, faster and harder. "oh yes fuck me just like that" she murmured. motivation, music to my ears. I fisted so hard, she started vibrating, she screamed so loud, I felt her come but I kept going, she begged me to stop but I went in harder.... She tried to push me off but she was in a very awkward position. I leaned over for her breasts, I kissed her neck while playing with her boobs and hitting it from behind! The pain turned to a plain pleasure. She moaned again! I asked her if she still wanted me to stop.... "no, no, please don't stop. Yhea, yhea I love it like that. A a a just like that." She whispered softly. I pounded till we were both breathless. I pulled out when I was about to cum! She turned around and kissed me... I held her, she broke free from my embrace and pushed me.

"MJ and Alex must be so irritated." She said putting her jeans on. I also got dressed. When were done she looked herself in the mirror and tried to fix her hair. I stood behind her and bit her ear. She chuckled.

Then I heard something breaking, she heard it too cause I heard her asking ...

" what was that."

Both our minds came back to reality! We looked around but there was nothing.

"We should go, now."

She said.... Before I knew it someone was behind me, he closed my mouth so the other one did to Jessy. There were a couple of them, they came out of the ceiling board ... They tied us up and lifted us up to the ceiling board, they had opened a hole on the roof... This had to be the space they used to get in, it was behind the main entrance which meant MJ n Alex couldn't see what was going on. They had a ladder from the roof to the ground. After we went down the ladder

they instructed us to get in the car. Both of us were tied up and our mouth her wrapped.

A lady around 35 years old did something with her hands up I think she was a witch. she was the last one to get in the car.

"its done. Mellisa will not know what happened nor will she be able to track their scent."

After she told the driver drove off and stopped not far from where we were from. It looked like a abandoned two room house. We got out of the car and went to the house! I literally choke on my saliva when I saw who was inside the house, patiently waiting for us.... I smiled and giggled a little.

"you could have asked nicely to meet your little brother you know? ... Did you miss me that much that you had to kidnap me in the middle of the night." I said sarcastically.

Jessy: you know him?

Me: he's my big brother.

Kwanda: OJ useyi mofie nangoku!

(He got off the chair)

Me: if you mean Im still by my sister's side yes ndiseyi mofie nangoku Kwanda.

Kwanda: you were always too dumb to see the bigger picture. Look at me lil brother I am building an empire to be untouchable, to hunt down each and every supernatural. You should have picked a winning side little brother. Now you'll have to go down with the rest of them! I believe you have met my witch friend, Nancy. ... Nancy they are all yours.

(Nancy took a drop of my blood and Jessy's.... )

Kwanda: you look so calm... (He chuckled) Mellisa is not coming to save you. You will not be found until we are done with you and we sent you out there like sending out our dogs to hunt the most dangerous wild animal.

Me: tell me something brother; why are you so Keen to kill OUR sister? What did our parents promise you?

Kwanda: Mellisa is no longer the cute lil sister we grew up with, she is a monster, her basic need is to kill. Us as hunters are meant to protect humans and the witches to maintain balance. Mellisa shouldn't have been born but I gwest you already knew that but because you are an idiot, you think she can be saved.



Jessy: lord! Save us from the petty talk! Are you going to kill us or what? I mean if you wanted to catch up with your little brother you would have asked nicely.

"Feisty, I like her already." Said an old mam getting in the house.

Kwanda: meet our grand father, a true hunter like us.

Me: haha true hunter huh? You and I are immune to supernaturalism. Stop being petty because you were not the chosen one, Mellisa is... Find your life purpose. Just because you are determined to kill your sister it doesn't make you a true hunter!

Kwanda: (he tightened his jaws and looked at me) let me give you a reason to hate me brother! You are going to kill your beloved evil sister! That will be your only life purpose. You will not be able to control yourself.

Me: you don't know Mellisa... She will find you and kill you with no remorse. She spared you your life the last time you attacked us! You hurt me, she is going to come for you with everything she has!

Nancy: oh sweetie, we are not going to hurt you. You are going to kill Mellisa. (She drew a star on my wrist and drew the same star on Jessy. I felt dizzy. She came back and looked me in the eyes) you will do exactly as I say... Rules are crystal clear...

1. Do not let Mellisa touch you.
2. Take her to some house, make her feel comfortable
3. Find a perfect moment , drive this silver knife through her heart and not take it out. Don't miss.

(She gave me a silver knife. Its tip was covered in something black. She went to Jessy and told her the same thing but she was instructed to kill Alex. I dozed off after that. When we woke up the curse was activated! Nothing was on my mind except killing MJ. Jessy looked at me and reminded my task and I reminded hers ... I don't know how but we found our way back to the garage! I saw our car still parking on the same spot! We knocked on the window, Only Mellisa was in side, she jumped out of the car and screamed asking where we were! My only desire was to drive a silver knife on her heart if she had one. She tried to hug us but rule number one was... "dont let Mellisa touch you."

Jessy and I rode in the same car, we stopped in a motel. It was just what we needed to make Mellisa comfortable and kill her.

[03/16, 20:31] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 38

My brother's behaviour was rather disturbing but somehow I understood him. I could be a control freak sometimes, only because I cared a lot. I was worried sick about them. But I decided to give them space, maybe things didn't go as they planned. Nothing makes a person bitter like a horrible sex. I laughed to myself at that thought. Jessy and OJ got in our car and drove off. Alex and I were left with no choice but to drive with Rick. I took a back seat, Rick took driver's seat and Alex sat on the front passenger seat. Amanda quickly covered her face as soon as she heard a door opening. I looked at her and words stuck in my throat. I didn't know whether to feel sorry for her or not I mean she was the one who tried to sacrifice my unborn baby to her brother's sick ritual. Not just my baby but this is also her brother's baby, this is her niece or nephew. I don't care if she was bullied in making that decision but she was a grown up witch woman to be bullied by her little brother. In my eyes her and Rick were equally guilty! But that didn't mean I couldn't ride in their car.

"What's wrong with those two? Where were they?" Alex said, startling me.

Me: I don't know, they are being kids... They are just tired. I don't know man

Rick: but being tired doesn't explain why my locating spell was blocked. Why I couldn't find them.

Me: what? What do you mean?

Rick: nothing ... I can't get my head around it.

Alex: and it also doesn't explain why they didn't want you to touch them.

Me: not everybody like hugs. Come on guys....

Alex: they are stopping at the motel.

(Rick pulled over and parked next to OJ. We got out of the car to talk to OJ and Jes. They looked fine and relaxed than before.)

Onke : sis Bae

Me: OJ

Onke: I'm sorry about earlier.

Me: its okay. Are you alright mntase?

Onke: I have never been better.

(He gave me a naughty smile and winked at me. I laughed aloud. I had no idea my brother love izinto!!! And then the memories of him and Jessy shagging in the bathroom came running in my head, I tried my best to contain myself. The more I tried was the more I wanted to burst out and laugh. )

Alex: so why did we stop here?

Onke: we have been on the road for quite some time, sis Bae needs to rest a little. So does this human (pointed at himself)

Alex: sounds good.

Rick: MJ can we talk?

Onke: no, my sister is going to the motel... She knows what she has to do.

Jessy: you are not one of us Rick! I don't even know why you are here. Last time I saw you, you almost killed Mellisa, you held me and Onke hostages. I can't believe MJ is even talking to you.

Rick: one. I wasn't talking to you, why does my presence bother you? Two. I'm still Rick, the thing you should fear. Talk to me with that tone again, I will show you hell! I will curse you to go stand in front of a train! (He emphasized every word.)

Jessy: hahaha you talk big game, we all know you can't hurt us because if you do, Mellisa will hate you forever and everybody knows you fancy her. Once a bitch, always a bitch.

(I could see anger building up in Rick's eyes, he tightened his jaws and looked away. This was his weakest point because for a change in his life he was a beggar and he wasn't doing so good at it. Jessy looked at him and smiled then he took Onke by a hand leading him to the motel. "MJ, are you coming?" asked Onk. I told Rick to wait for me there, I first had to attend my brother. Alex and I went inside the motel. I went to the receptionist and asked for a pen, when she gave me the pen I held her hand, I saw her life in flashes but I had to focus on what I was doing, I told her I and my friends booked two rooms for two weeks, we paid online. In our payment we included room service.

She smiled. "whats your name again?"

Me: Mellisa.

Her: oh yhea Mellisa and 3 friends, you booked 2nd floor, room 26 and 27. Here are your keys. I'm so sorry there must be a mistake, we don't offer room service, we are a small motel. Would you like to do a refund? My manager will be here tomorrow if you have any queries.

Me: no, there will be no need for such trouble.

(When she was giving me the keys I held her hand and told her there was no mistake done, she has nothing to report to the manager.)

Her: enjoy your stay Miss.

Me: thank you.

(I took the keys and went to my Alex and others who were seated on the couch. I gave them the keys and told them I will catch up with them in a minute, I had to go and talk to Rick.)

Onke: what is it that Rick offered you MJ? That man wanted to kill you.

Me: that man can be saved.

Jessy: who said he wants to be saved! People are handed their soul mates in silver platters but they decide to shit on everything. Do you think Alex is happy you are hanging out with your baby daddy? I mean it's bad enough that he is going to raise Rick's child but watching...

(She couldn't finish that sentence, Alex jumped at her, pinned her against the wall. Thank God there were no people around just a security and receptionist. Alex's eyes were deep dark red, they meant danger, he had his claws dug in Jes's throat)

Alex: you disrespect my Queen like that one more time I swear I will rip you apart! You will never live to see another day. Understood?

(Jessy was bleeding, the security came running asking what was wrong, I tapped his shoulder and told him we are just playing he must go back to the main entrance. I told the same to the receptionist when she was jumping for the phone. "Put the phone down, don't be scared. We are just playing." She quickly put the phone down and smiled. "i love your dreadlocks by the way." She said, I thanked her and sped off to Alex.)

"let her go my love."

I said, I held his shoulder channelling his anger. He looked at me, channelling my calmness. He slowly removed his hand from Jessy's throat, with his eyes still fixed on me, then I heard a painful howl escaping his mouth, I popped my eyes out not understanding what was wrong, my chest got tore apart, when I removed my eyes from Rick only then I saw Jessy stack a sliver knife in Alex's chest! Ndavele ndadenga! Rick held me as he slowly fell down! I held him and went on the floor with him, I put his head on my lap. He smiled and a tear escaped his eye as he took his last breath. I heard his heart stop beating. His eyes stopped blinking, his head tilted on the side. I could feel tears welling on my eyes, I looked up at Jessy.

"what did you do?" I screamed. I smelt blood every where. I howled from the bottom of my stomach, it was like half of my heart had stopped beating! All I wanted was to tear Jessy from inside out. I got up and held Jessy with my hairy and scary hands, I felt her heart beat. It was normal. She wasn't cared. Her eyes were cold. Her death had to be slowly, miserable and memorable, I wanted to see fear in her eyes, I wanted her to curse me when shes trapped on the other side! I looked at her in disgust, pain and anger, but she looked at me with pride and joy. When I was about to put my hand in her heart I felt something piercing on my back, I screamed, when I turned around Onke had a silver knife with a black tip, he stabbed me on my heart.\*\*\* He took out the knife from Alex's chest to stab me on the back... And took out his knife to stab me on the heart. I felt the poison spreading on my body, killing every cell! As I slowly closed my eyes and fell down I saw Rick getting in the motel, screaming.....

"Nooooooooo"

The weather changed. Rain, thunder and storms ... In that order.

#like I said... Its the end of the week....I'm back (OBJ:) (OBJ:) I missed you

[03/16, 20:34] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 39

Rick's POV

Mellisa told me to wait in the car she had to attend her brother. They had no money for the motel I'm sure they wanted Mellisa to mind control everyone, I went back to the car and watched her leaving, making her way to the motel.

Jessy disrespected me and everything I stood for, Mellisa was the only thing standing between

me and Jessy but I promise you this now, once Mellisa cure my sister I will break every bone in Jes's body. She will wish she had kept her mouth shut. I sat impatiently in the car waiting for bloody Mellisa to come back. Nxee I wished I could just force her to heal my sister but I didn't want to ruin any chances for my sister to be healed besides the last time I made Mellisa angry she gave me a massive headache and my sister lost her sight.

Amanda: she is not going to come back. I told you she is not going to help me.

Me: she is, if she wasn't going to help she would have said.

Amanda: you are still obsessed with her, aren't you? If you had stopped your immortal obsession I would still have my eye sight!

Me: I know Amanda and it haunts me enough so I don't need you to shove it down my throat, I know!

Amanda: we should go. Find a witch, whatever that happened, a witch can reverse it.

Me: I'm still the most powerful witch, if I couldn't help who else do you is going to help you? Huh? Believe it or not Mellisa is our only hope Amanda.

(Amanda clicked her tongue)

Me: trust me okay?

Amanda: trust you? Are you fucking serious? Trusting you has brought me nothing but pain. Look at me Rick, look at me! But that doesn't matter because even if you could look at me I wouldn't be able to see you! I'm blind all because of you, what kind of a monster are you? I thought this baby would be your redemption but you went right ahead and attempted to kill it. What happened to you little brother? What did I do so wrong? We both grew up in the street Rick, I was just a kid too when I had to take care of you! What happened to your humanity? I still remember the sweet innocent Rick who I'd sing to every night before we sleep, that innocent little boy who slept on my lap every night, told me he was scared, asked when mother was coming to get us! I remember, I remember I would hold your hand and tell you mama is not coming, its you and me against the world. The minute you discovered your powers you became this power hungry beast I couldn't even recognise. I'm sorry I couldn't mother you well, I was a kid too. But I'm telling you now brother; you'll die with nothing because every beautiful thing you have you chase it away, you have an ability of destroying everything ! The mother of your child Rick, your child... What have you become little brother? Explain it to me...

(I felt tears burning down my cheeks. Really? What had I become? I turned around and looked at my sister)

Me: I'm sorry Amanda. I'm sorry I'm such a disappointment. There's nothing wrong you have

done. You protected me from the cold, from the bullies, from poverty, you sister.. You protected me from the cruelty of this world not knowing the most dangerous monster was the one you nurture, the one you were feeding and clothing everyday. And the worst thing is that I'm not looking for redemption but I will make peace with Mellisa, grow that child for you sister.

Amanda: I want you to do it for yourself brother. Be a father to your kid, a better father.

Rick: things like children makes you weak and I hate being weak.

Amanda: Mellisa makes you weak, hurting her hurt you more. It was all over your eyes. Being 'the thing everyone fears' will not take you any where brother. At the end of the day we need a warm place to call home.

Me: you are my home.

(Before Amanda could respond I heard Mellisa howl)

Amanda: is that Mellisa.

(I heard my sister asking but I was already out of the car, running to the motel, the security guard tried to say something I didn't care what he was saying I flipped my hand and broke his neck. When I entered the motel, I didn't know I had a heart, but right there at that moment I felt it breaking into pieces, I felt a sharp pain I had never felt before, I lost it..... I lost everything including control for my powers! Every part of me was shaking, I felt like crawling out of my skin. I saw Mellisa.... With my naked eyes I saw Mellisa with two silver knives, one on her back and the other one in her heart. I couldn't believe my eyes, I knelt down and screamed. "nooooo" the weather changed without my command. I heard Onke and Jessy screaming and shouting at me to stop I was killing them. It wasn't my doing, I had no control! I closed my eyes and focused my mind onto something! Mellisa James, I remember the day she turned me to a werewolf! How she easily beat me when no one have ever beaten me in my years of living. She was the smartest person I knew, after I have tried to kill her for my personal gain she loved me still like the past didn't happen, I remembered the love making, her smile, her laughter, how she would play with my hair. Above everything; her kindness! The world has been bitter to her but unlike me she still had her humanity! For the first time allowed my self to admit the truth that; without the supernatural hold she had over me, I still loved her, with everything in me. I was bitter towards her because she found her mate, because her and I had no chance in this universe. In my twisted state of mind I had to hurt her, drive her away to convince myself that I didn't care.

When I gained my composure I got up and ran to her. Onke and Jessy were bleeding through their ears, nose and eyes. I held her in my arms.

"Mellisa James, you are immortal. You can never die. You have to wake up." I whispered in her ear. I put my hand in her heart beat and it was still. I couldn't help but cry. I wanted to kill

someone, not just someone but Onke who I witnessed stabbing Mellisa, but that's not how Mellisa would wanna be honoured . I kissed my hand and put a boundary spell around the motel. No one could come in or go out. I picked her up and the keys that were laying next to Alex, I took her to the second floor, room 26. I went back and felt Onke's heart beat. Him and Jessy were alive but it was late for Alex... I took OJ and Jessy to room 26 and went back for Alex. I pulled out the silver knives from Mellisa. I sat on the bed and put her head on my lap and waited. She looked so peaceful and more beautiful. Fresh tears rolled down my cheeks, every minute passed by my heart became heavier. I traced her jaw line, her skin was dark and smooth. I noticed how perfect she was, only if her heart was beating. I put my hand on her stomach. Some how wishing to hear a heart beat. I felt the connection with my child, how could i have wanted to kill such a beautiful soul. Now she was gone I couldn't tell her how sorry I was. I hated myself. Onke and Jessy woke up looking like idiots.

Onke: what happened? What happened to my sister?

(He came running but I pushed him away with my mind.)

Onke: its my sister damn it! What have you done to her? I swear to God I will seek power and kill you, you son of a bitch.

(I heard pain in his voice and realised he had no idea he stabbed his own beloved little sister. He came to Mellisa, felt a pulse on her wrist. "she can't be dead, no no no what happened to my little sister?" he said cupping her face.

"Please sis Bae. Don't die on me."

He kept whispering. Jessy sat on the floor and cried. "MJ not like this, not now. No no" she kept saying rocking herself back and forth. I got off the bed and went to Alex. I closed his eyes and said my good byes to the man who snitched my girlfriend. Just when I finish closing his eyes, he took a deep breath and sat on his butt. All of us were shocked , we look at him. He touched his chest and it was completely healed. He looked at me.

"How are you alive." I blunted out and asked.

"she missed. If you want to kill a werewolf with a silver you go for a heart not for a chest." He said and got up. I was terrified for him, what he was going to feel when he saw Mellisa breathless. This had to be where having a mate sucked. He looked around and saw Onke holding Mellisa. He slowly walked to Mellisa.

"What happened?" He said.

Onke: I don't know when I woke up she was like this. She was dead.

Alex: but I don't feel it.

Me: what do you mean you don't feel it?

Alex: she is my mate, if she was dead, a part of me would be dead too.



Me: maybe your mate bond is broken.

Alex: and you would love that, wouldn't you? Our bond would never be broken Rick, give it up.

Onke: what's happening to her?

Alex: I don't know, what I know is that she is not dead.

(We waited there impatiently. Jessy and Onke kept asking what happened. They must have been under a spell. Who ever did this was powerful because I couldn't track back the source of the spell. It looked like I had a competition, more like someone I will kill to get their power. I couldn't get in their heads and learn what happened when they were missing. All I could see was the sex in the bathroom. These kids were wild, but what were you hoping for from a Xhosa guy and a blonde chick. I tried to explain to them how everything wasn't their fault, they were mind controlled.

"I should have fought it, if my sister dies I will never be able to live with myself." Onke exclaimed, I wasn't too good in nursing feelings, I just kept quiet. Alex was next to MJ, holding her hand, not for a minute had he took his eyes off her. It was a beautiful sight, yet hurting. The mate bond was real. There was nothing I could do about it.

"then it's a good thing that your sister will never die." Mellisa said slowly opening her eyes and smiling to her brother. We all laughed in relief.

Mellisa James scared the living hell out of me. She got up and hugged Alex.

Mj: how did you survive a silver knife?

Alex: she had to go for the heart. She missed.

Onke: I'm so sorry.

Jessy: I swear I didn't mean to hurt you. The worse thing is I can't remember any of it.

Mellisa: it's okay, it wasn't your fault I should have known something was wrong.

Me: I tried retrieving their memories but I couldn't.

(When Mellisa was about to touch her brother she stopped... Like on second thought.)

Me: what is it?

Mellisa: (she held her stomach and looked at me) the baby...

Me: what... Wha (I couldn't finish the question, I was terrified of the answer. I saw it in her watery eyes.)

Mellisa: I can't feel its heart beat.

[03/16, 20:37] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 40

"i should have fought it, if my sister dies I will never be able to live with myself." I heard my brother saying these words from a distance. I could feel my cells rebuilding, it felt like I was growing new organs and new skin. I opened my eyes a little and found Alex holding my hand. I was greeted by a greatest sadism in my brother's eyes. I refused to believe I had fallen by his hand. There had to be another explanation, something out of the ordinary. Onke would never hurt me, not in his right states of mine.

"then Its a good thing that your sister will never die." I said slowly opening my eyes again and smiling at my brother. We all laughed in relief.

I got up and hugged Alex.

Me: how did you survive a silver knife?

Alex: she had to go for the heart. She missed.

Onke: I'm so sorry.

Jessy: I swear I didn't mean to hurt you. The worse thing is I can't remember any of it.

Me: its okay, it wasn't your fault I should have known something was wrong.

Rick: I tried retrieving their memories but I couldn't.

(Someone did something to Jessy and my brother and I had to find out. This explained they didn't want me to touch them. They were under a spell. Only one touch would tell me what exactly happened. With one touch I could see your whole life, you dreams, your nightmares, your fears, your happy moments. All of it by just touching your skin. When I reached for my brother something hit me. The baby!! I stopped in shock- like in second thought.

" what is it?" Rick asked with a very surprisingly concerned face.

I held my stomach and looked at Rick, "the baby..." That's all I could manage to say at that moment. I tried to keep my breathing level still. I tried to not panic but it was mission impossible.

"what... Wha..." Rick tried to ask, but he himself couldn't finish the question. He probably saw

the answer in my watery broken eyes which carried all the pain I was feeling from deep within. That's the thing about eyes- they never lie.

"I can't feel its heart beat."

I said still holding my stomach. In my surprise I saw something in Rick's eyes but pain, I saw pain. How could he look so broken when he himself tried to kill me with the baby. What changed. I held back the tears just like every one in the room held their breath, it was so awkwardly silent.

"You healed. The baby is going to heal. It has to. The baby has all your powers and Rick's powers." Alex said holding my hand, trying to give me hope. He channelled my heart break and i channelled his quiet sea mood. I nodded, I was scared to blink because if I did tears were going to fall down my cheeks so I excused myself to the bathroom. When I got off the bed I was startled by Jessy who called on the man above. "Oh my God Mellisa." She blurted. I looked at her, she had her mouth covered by her right hand. Everyone looked like they have seen a ghost. When I was about to ask what was wrong I was stopped by something cutting across my bladder. I moaned a little and looked for Alex's shoulder to balance. When I turned my head around I noticed why everyone was shot dead, there was blood on the bed where I was seated.

I almost fell, the sight was horrible. The agonising pain was both physical and emotional, even the mate bond failed to calm me down. I fell in Alex's arms, he carried me to the bathroom, following Rick. Rick filled a bath tub with hot water and Revlon foam, Alex undressed me, when I was completely naked he put me in the tub. Tears just kept rolling down my cheeks.

I just sat in the tub. Alex kept brushing the tears off my cheeks. I must admit, it was a funny sight. There was my baby daddy and my mate in the same bathroom, sharing my pain. I asked them to please leave me alone. They both dragged their heavy bodies out of the bathroom.

As I sat there quietly, the pain across my bladder came back only ten times harder this time. The water turned red. I removed the stopper, the pain went around my back, it was too much too bare. I let my wolf to save me from the agony. For the first time in a long time when I turned to a wolf I heard every bone of my body breaking, I felt every pain. All of it. I howled and I jumped out of the bathroom, breaking door in the process, I ran and broke the door from our room to the corridor! I dug my palms harder to the main entrance! When I was to get out of the motel, something stroke me back! I stood there by the main entrance and howled! Fuck the damn boundary spell.

"I am here my love. You are not alone." Someone in my head said, of course it was Alex. I looked up the stair case and saw him in his black shiny wolf form. His mint scent caught me just like the first time. I howled but he kept calm and showed no fear. I told him not to come closer, I told him to leave me alone. I told him to tell Rick to break the spell.

"Its kinda hard to leave you alone you know, given the fact that I feel everything you feel. I am in pain, not only because I'm bound to feel everything you feel mainly because seeing you hurt like think hurt me more. I need you to take my hand, okay. I promise you everything is going to be okay." He said. By this time his nose was almost touching mine. I couldn't help but notice how my wolf form had grown. It was now the same height as Alex. I saw my green eyes in his dark eyes.

"im so sorry."

He said in my head, slowly changing to his human form. He knelt down to match my height. He brushed the fur on my head and kissed the bridge of my nose. I sat down next to the receptionist's desk, still in my wolf form. Alex sat next to me.

"I refuse to believe that this is how our lives are going to be till the end, well till forever since we are kind of immortal."

Alex said looking at the door. I changed to my human form. Both of us were naked. I rested my head on his lap, close to his manhood. He played with my dreadlocks.

Me: what do you mean?

Alex: I mean we deserve much better than being on the run. You are a Princess, destined to be a queen, you deserve much better than this Mellisa. You deserve a home .

Me: isn't it nice to hear that? To believe it...

Alex: tomorrow we are going home.

Me: where? (I lifted my head)

Alex: home. Things have to change Mellisa. You are a Royal blood Princess. They have to accept that. That is my home, our home.

Me: last time we were there they seemed not bothered to kill you too in the process.

Alex: if they try that again. We will kill them first.

Me: I hope it won't come to that. Before we think ahead of ourselves there's something I have to sort out first.

(I stood up and went to our room. They had changed the bedding and cleaned up, how sweet but I was sour and not feeling good. Rick asked if I was okay but I didn't pay attention. I went straight to my brother, held his arm and dug in his head. I didn't even see I was hurting him. The

few days of his memories were erased. I heard my brother asking me to stop but I couldn't help myself! Then I felt a massive headache! I let go of Onke and held my head, it was Rick and his witch juju. He stopped as soon as I let go of Onke. I looked at Rick, he threw me a dress. "i borrowed it from the girl next door." He said trying to be funny but I was in no mood for humour. I was on my butt, I looked at him and looked around, I saw sneakers that were on the floor, in my mind I wished I could hit him with the sneakers on the face.... I moved my eyes from the sneakers and looked at Rick again. I was shocked when the sneakers landed on his face.

Jessy: bloody hell, did you just moved the sneakers with your mind?

Rick: yhea I think she did.

Onke: she definitely did. (Watshothoza like a sick old man)

Alex: guys not right now okay?

(Alex was already dressed. He came to me and helped to put on the dress. I looked at my brother, his ears were bleeding.)

Me: hey your ears.

Onke: thanks to you.

Me: here. (I took his hand and focused on taking his pain)

Me: feeling better?

Onke: yhea thanks. How are you? I'm sorry little sister.

Me: yhea me too. Look I have to dig deep in your head. I need to see what happened. I'm sorry its gonna hurt but when we are done I'm going to heal you. Yhea?

Onke: dig all you need sister. We have to find who killed my niece.

(With teary eyes he gave me his hand. He some how felt it was his fault that I lost my baby. I built a wall around my miscarriage , it was too painful to think about it. Those walls protected me from thinking about it, they protected me from feeling. "so you know, it wasn't your fault." I said before taking his hand and unleashed hell to him. He was in pain, I felt tears rolling down my checks for causing my brother this much pain, but I couldn't stop, the walls around my heart were built in comfort of breaking every bone of those who killed my little baby. I was close in breaking the spell. I dag a little harder and I saw everything that happened. My brother was

almost dying, I had to stop. I healed my brother and let him rest. I apologised for causing him pain... If there was another way to find out what happened I wouldn't have hurt him. I sat on the floor and hugged myself. I learned the truth, I had to swallow the fist sized pill. It was bitter.

"Did you see what happened?" Alex asked. I nodded, Rick's mood picked up. He came and knelt next to me.

"Tell me, who is behind this? Who killed my child? How did my child not survive?" He asked with so much rage that sent cold shivers down my spine.

Me: the silver knife was tipped in poison, my child wasn't strong enough to survive. Little did they know that when she dies she will leave all her powers to me. I can feel them, my eyes are still green.

Rick: give me the name Mellisa James.

His murderous eyes pleaded. I knew what this man was capable of. He already killed half of my family. I didn't know if I was ready to hand in another member of my family for him to kill. I sniffed as the bitter truth pierced through my heart causing me a hard time to breathe. Right at that moment I wasn't crying because I lost a baby, I was crying because it was all in the hands of my brother. My own blood and flesh wanted to see nothing more than me in the coffin. I was crying because the man I talked to for more than an hour about six months ago, on the night I activated the curse had no other life purpose but to hunt me down like an animal. I was crying because I couldn't believe that the brother who loved me so much just about six months ago killed my unborn child.

I was crying because family supposed to be power but mine was a curse. Nevertheless I had Onke, Jessy, Alex..... Awkwardly, and Rick.

We all grieved together for my baby, just like a family should. I didn't get to hold her in my arms but I could feel her absence.

\*

\*

\*

Do we still have silent readers? Haven't they fallen yet?

[03/16, 20:38] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 41

"Umm, I'm tired."

I murmured looking at Rick. He bit his lower lip trying not to push it. I got up and went to bed. Rick went out and not say where he was going. That night I didn't sleep even a blink. I felt Alex's eyes penetrating through my back, he watched me all night, scared to say a word- he got closer and wrapped his arm around. We slept in a spoon position. I let tears wet the pillow. Every time I closed my eyes I saw him, I saw my older brother! He gave the order! He even found a witch to take me out. The more I thought about this the more it worked me. Why was I protecting him? He killed my child before it could even see the light.

In the morning Rick was still not back to the hotel. I turned around and looked at Alex, he smiled. I smiled a little.

"You should sleep you know?" I said.

Alex: wouldn't it be nice if you took your own advice? (He smiled again. I panted a kiss on his mint lips and got off the bed. I was surprised to see my brother on the floor between Jessy's legs, Jessy was sitting on the couch with her eyes closed. I kicked my brother on the knee. "fuck" he yelled involuntarily opening his eyes.

"what was that for Bae?" He asked getting up and stretching his arms, neck and legs.

"that brother was for sleeping on the floor while I compelled a receptionist to give you your own room." I pushed him. He pulled me close and planted a kiss on my left cheek.

Onke: someone had to watch you.

Me: umm when you are this sweet you scare the little heaven out of me. (We both laughed) besides I have a mate to watch me and it looks like my powers are doubled. What's your real

excuse for not getting a good sleep?

Onke: honest truth is- we didn't wanna be alone we all know what happened the last time Jessy and I were alone. (After that the spark in his eyes disappeared. Totally feeling responsible for what happened)

Me: (I held his hand) this wasn't your fault Onke, I never doubted your loyalty. Even before I learned what happened I didn't believe I had fallen because of you! See? Human race wake up with different feelings everyday but I know you, you'll never hurt me. You are the only human race I know his feelings would never change. I know if you had a choice you wouldn't have stabbed me. Its not your fault OJ.

Onke: I'm really sorry though. If it makes you feel any better you and Alex still have immortality to try. (He gave me the warmest hug)

Jessy: can't you all be lovey Davey out side? You are making noise and I want to sleep. (She got up from the couch and went to the bed, she threw her self next to Alex. )

Onke: I understand, its jealousy not you Jes...

Jessy: go away. (She then buried her face under the pillow. My brother led me out of the room. We went downstairs to the reception.)

Onke: do you think the building is still sealed?

Me: I don't know but we are going to find out.

Onke: where is Rick?

"speak of the devil and he shall appear." He said showing up at the main entrance.

Me: where have you been?

Rick: in the car with my sister. You had enough body guards I didn't think you'd miss me. Besides with your new tricks I didn't think you need someone to watch you.

Me: I didn't say I missed you. Where is everyone?

Rick: well, I cleaned up the place and put this sign... You can thank me later. (He showed me a sign that said the building was being renovated.) Now you have the whole building to yourself. I know its old and all but its better than nothing, what do you think Onke.

Onke: (shrugging his shoulders) I don't know...

Rick: probably because you aren't thinking (he gave Onke a pat on the shoulder and led us to his car. He was shockingly in a good mood.)



Me: you are in a good mood...

Rick: the sky is cloudless blue.

Onke: who are you going to kill?

Rick: (he stopped and looked at Onke) you are surprisingly smart. That's why I like you brother. You are observant. Its a good thing.

Me: oh?

(he looked at me with those green eyes that make even a woman who is under a love spell drool. I folded my arms and tried to maintain an innocent look, letting those blue eyes penetrate through my mid side brown eyes. My mouth became drier each moment. He let out a goofy smile)

Rick: its a good day because me and my almost baby mama are going hunting.

(He then opened the back door of the car. Amanda got out of the car, wearing shades. Amanda greeted and sent her condolences.)

Rick: Onke please help my sister find her way to the motel. Y'all take care of her. Mj and I are going to be back soon.

Onke: where are you going?

Rick: hunting.

Me: I'm not sure I got the memo.

Rick: you know who killed my unborn child, justice have to be served.

Me: umm no.

(They were all shocked by my answer.)

Rick: what? (He looked at me differently this time sending cold shivers all over my body)

Onke: what do you mean no? Someone kidnapped me and Jessy and compelled us to kill you and your mate. You lost your child, that person has to die.

Me: its too soon. I still have to mourn my baby. Its not the right time for a killing spree.

Rick: you don't have to be a part of this Mellisa. It was my child too. Killing is my only therapy. Give me the damn name and I will do it alone.

Me: (I chuckled) your child? Oh yhea the one you tried to kill.

Rick: don't change the subject Mellisa James. Give me the name before I take it out from your head.

Me: I'd love to see you try. I have new toys remember?

Amanda: both of you stop it! You both lost a child, this is the time to grieve not to show off about how much powers you have.

(The blind big sister said. We both kept quiet. Onke took her hand and leaded her blind blonde behind to the motel. I followed, leaving Rick standing by the car alone. When we got to the motel room, we found Alex and Jessy sitting on the bed and chatting about what appeared to be very deep. After a few minutes of our arrival Rick showed up.)

Rick: Mellisa James we need to talk.

Me: talk.... And will you stop calling me by my first name and surname.

Rick: I'm sorry sweetheart. (He tilted his head on the side and gave out his half smile)

Me: call me MJ

Rick: (shrugging his shoulders) alright MJ. May I have a minute of your time.

Me: mxm.

Rick: (walking in the room, he laughed a little when noticing I was bored out of my mind. His eyes glittered in satisfaction) lol I like you when you are pouting.

(Did he just flirt with me? In front of my mate even? Where were his manners? I saw a pen that was on the dresser! I threw it on this thigh with my eyes. It caught him by surprise. He held his thigh where I stabbed him and screamed calling me a bitch. He pulled out the pen and limped his way next to Alex. He was bleeding. )

Rick: was that necessary?

Me: I told you I have new toys to play with. (They all laughed at him.)

Rick: I will give it a pass.... Even though I want to boil your blood till you break every bone in your body and turn.

Me: you have such a wild imagination. What is it that you wanted to talk about?

Rick: umm wait... Haaaaa (he screamed and put his leg on Jessy)

Rick: huuuu this hurts like a bitch, I think I'm going to change my mind about not hurting you back. What are you laughing at bloody tattoos?

Jessy: excuse me for finding humour in your misery. Hahaha look at him MJ, he looks so pathetic ...a big bad witch can't take a little stab...

(Rick rubbed his forth finger together with his thumb.... Jessy's mouth was shut! She couldn't open it. We all died of laughter. )

Rick: how is that Miss earthquake? Huh?

Me: hahaha this isn't funny.

Alex: but you are laughing ...

Me: Its hard not to. (I went and sat on his lap. Next to Rick)

Rick: since we are sitting here and morning the loss of my child, would you be healing my sister in the meantime...

Amanda: please MJ. I, I know I don't deserve your help after what I tried to do... I wont even try to justify it and say how my brother persuaded me. It was wrong, I should have known better. I'm sorry.

Me: its okay, I will do it but try hurting me again you won't lose only your eye sight. Does it hurt?

Amanda: no, no it doesn't hurt.

Me: all you need is my blood, every broken part in you will grow back... Pitty my blood doesn't wake consciousness or humanity.

(I went to the bathroom where I saw a mug. I bit my wrist and bled in the mug then I gave Amanda to drink. After a few minutes she took her shades off, she had her eyes wide open in disbelief. "oh my God, its a miracle." She said and jumped at me with a bone crush hug and kisses all over my face. "thank you so much. I owe you my life.")

Me: don't worry about it.

Rick: wow that was impressive. So I have a little trick myself. Look at this.

(I look at him. He put a hand on his wound and said an ancient spell and the wound was healed. Moon above this man doesn't learn, he doesn't remember what happened the last time he showed off?!) )

Me: why didn't you heal your sister then?

Rick: it works on small wounds.

Me: am I the only one who is starving? Whose coming with me to get food.

"I'll go with you." Alex and Rick said at the same time.

Me: thank you gentlemen but I'll go with my brother.

Jessy: I'll tag along as long as non of your men is coming.

Me: its okay my brother and I will manage.

Jessy: alright then.

Me: you need to get some rest baby. I'll be back before you know it. (I blew him a kiss)

Alex: are you sure you don't want me to come along?

Me: I'm positive. Besides if something is wrong you'll feel it too. Lets go brother.

(Brother let's go. Onke took the car keys and followed me to the car.)

Onke: what's up?

Me: what do you mean? That question has dozens of answers.

Onke: I mean what do you want to talk about? Before anything, stay away from Rick, MJ. I saw the way you looked at each other all of a sudden. If Alex dies, you die. Remember that... And of Rick feels you and him have a chance, he will get Alex out of the way permanently. Uyamazi nawe.

Me: I don't know what you are talking about and I have no interest in dwelling on it.

(Before we got in the car I held his wrist and dag my claws on it... I gave him back his memory. )

Onke: (he looked at me, a tear fell down his cheek) I remember, I remember everything. Kwanda abducted me. He wanted me to kill you, he wanted me to kill our little sister. Has he gone mad.

(His face was puzzled and blank, refusing to believe our big brother went all this length to kill me.)

"I figured as much. It was family business."

Rick said behind us, startling the both of us. We turned around and looked at him, almost pleading for our big brother's life. He looked back at us with his blue murderous eyes.

Rick: Should I bring you his head or his heart?

#dark novella fell, so should silent readers.. if you know you forget to like... Like before you read... I know some are still asking that 20th century question... "what do admins get from the likes" ... The honest answer is; they get absolutely nothing honey, just like they get nothing from posting their stories on Facebook... Its just nice to know that the people reading your story likes

it yabo....

[03/16, 20:39] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 42

“Should I bring you his head or his heart?”

Rick said with a smug little smile and shot dead blue murderous eyes.

“You will not harm MY brother!! He will suffer on my terms.” I said slowly, getting close to him.

Rick: the question was a gesture of kindness, not a permission request. Its not just your baby that he killed!

Me: stop! Stop using the baby as an excuse of going to a killing spree Rick! You didn't want that baby, you wanted it dead just as much. You are probably mad you are not the one who killed it!

Rick: (he roughly pinned me against the car) do you know what I went through when I saw you dead? Huh? Have you ever bothered and ask who saved you, who pulled out that knife? I sat there and listened to your heart beat, I listened to her heart beat and it was not there! I wished I had came to the motel sooner, I should have known something was wrong the minute you stayed more than 10 minutes in the motel when you promised to come back to me soon. So it was conformed that I still have a heart and its broken and now I want to break things... More like parts of a human being. For the first time when I felt my baby, she was taken away from me.

(Tears ran down his left cheek as he spoke from the heart. I was amazed and surprised. He slowly let go of me. I bit my lips and hugged him, awkwardly. “im so sorry.” I whispered in his ear.

Rick: I'm sorry too.

Me: please Rick

Rick: (he pulled away catching my tear before it fell) he took something from me. Something I will never have again.

Me: I'm sorry. He took something from me too. You will have children you are still young. (He was too close and I was uncomfortable. I moved away from him and stood next to Onke.)

Rick: not with you.

Me: huh?

Rick: even if I am going to have children, they won't be with you. (He said looking deep in my eyes, regret and guilt filled his voice. I realised that more than anything he was beating himself for the past occasions where he acted like he didn't care till it was too late. He realised what he had lost. It was a shot of a life time, something that will never be regained, a child with me. A child with a pure evil she wolf. More than anything he wished he had cared sooner. )

Rick: you two go get food, I will see you in a minute. (He headed to his car. I ran after him)

Me: Rick, I know what you feeling, I don't have to read your mind to know you are beating yourself for not caring about the baby from the beginning. Mourn your blood, let her soul rest in peace with no blood shed in her name, at least while her death is still fresh. Then we will see what to do with my brother, together.

Rick: you want me to believe you will cause your brother any sort of pain? You are weak Mellisa James, you let your feelings cloud your judgement.

Me: how sure are you?

Rick: (He lifted the corner of his lip, looked in my eyes like he was looking for something.) I don't know, Queen. (He said with a husky voice.)

Me: like I said, my brother will suffer in my terms. I don't want his head or heart. That's just too easy. Now let's go n get food for everyone.

(I turned around and walked to our car, Onke was already behind a driving wheel. Rick followed. We drove in total silence. I was in the front passenger seat, Rick was in the back, I kept glancing at him every now and then. He sat peaceful, looking out side the window. )

Onke: Rick is right you know? (He glanced at me)

Rick: I always am,... About what this time.

Onke: Kwanda, as much as its hard to admit it but he won't stop until you are dead MJ. He has to be stopped.

(I kept quiet.)

Rick: listen to your beloved brother. (After few seconds of silence) what are you thinking?

Me: I'm thinking about a better punishment for my evil brother.

Rick: give him what you gave me. Its a nightmare trust me. See how he will live with himself being what he loaths the most.

Onke: we are immune to supernaturalism

Rick: what does that mean?

Onke: my brother and I can't be witches, werewolves, vampires, or have any special ability like Jes.

Rick: how is that possible? Wait, but your little sister is the worst of all supernatural creatures?

Onke: long story dude.

Me: I'm an abomination, I shouldn't have been born, that's why I'm the worst and everyone including you want a piece of me.

(I said after the car stopped in a public parking lot. Rick and Onke starred at each other gossiping about me. Yima!! Where did Onke and Rick start being best friends. When this hit my mind I laughed a little and turned around looking at the car. They slowly got out the car , both with strange faces looking like they were going to burst in laughter. I paid no attention because I knew it was about me.

Not far from where we parked the was huge mall. I can't remember the last time I went to the mall like a normal girl who just graduated from teen years. It was crowded and gave me goose bumps, I was a little terrified by being among a number of people. I had gotten used seeing the same faces every day...)

Onke: MJ.

Me: yes.. (I looked up at him)

Onke: are you going to be able to do your thing here?

Me: shit, no no its too crowded, there are many eyes and cameras.

Rick: can't you do the same thing on the ATM?

Me: what do you mean?

Rick: I mean do the same thing you do to people to a ATM!!

Onke: wait, Rick is right... You tell people what you want them to think or do can't you do the same thing to machines?

Me: machines and people are two different things.

Rick: it's worth the short. We have nothing to lose.

Me: y'all are out of your mind yazi...

Onke: you do notice that's better than compelling a cashier in a store full of people.

Me: I'll do it phopho no need to blackmail me.

(They looked at each other and smiled, I rolled my eyes. We joined a standard bank ATM queue on the mall entrance. When it was our turn to use the ATM, the three of us went to the ATM! I'm sure abantu babeme nesimanga!!)

Me: what is it exactly that I'm supposed to do?

Rick: how are we supposed to know? You manipulate people's thoughts not us.

Me: this was your plan not mine. (We were all whispering kodwa singxola. The security came to us.)

Security: is everything alright here?

Me: (I smiled and neared my hand to his, once our pinky fingers touched I said; everything is fine sir, my brothers are teaching me how to withdraw money. It will take a little while.

Security: alright, no problem. Take your time...

(He then left. The 3 of us were back at it.)

Onke: you touch people for you to manipulate their thoughts right?

Me: yhea, so?

Rick: it doesn't take a bad mind controller to know you have to apply the same technique.

Me: voetsek.

Onke: come on sis bae other people are waiting to use the ATM.

(I rolled my eyes and sighed thinking how stupid this was, but Rick and Onke wouldn't let it go. I put my hand on the screen, "told" it I needed R5000. At first nothing happened but I felt a glimpse of possibility. I concentrated more this time with my eyes closed. I was startled by a krrrrr sound of money coming out of the machine. I put my hand on my chest, shocked. Onke took the cash, Rick pulled me by my hand as I was still shocked and wondering how the fuck I did that and what else I could do. "it looks like we will be going to a casino soon" Onke said, pleased.



“that was totally awesome” said Rick. Wow is the only word I had in my head. We bought lot of junk food, toiletries, few clothes and went back to the motel.

When we got to the motel they were half dead... Jessy jumped for pizza yamtshisa waphambana! We had also bought paper plates and paper cups. Amanda helped me to dish out. Rick and Onke shared the good news about my new trick. It was all they talked about through out the day and the evening.

Amanda: hey Mellisa, I can't thank you enough. Thank you for you know what, plus a great evening. But its already late my brother and I should probably go.

Me: you are welcome.

Jessy: so you guys just sleep where the sunset?

Rick: that's one way of putting it... No actually I'm not leaving without hearing what is going to be done with your brother.

Me: isn't that in the 40s??!!

(We all laughed I noticed Alex was quiet all this time.)

Me: are you alright? (I said holding his shoulder)

Alex: yhea, just a little headache.

Onke: I thought werewolves don't get sick.

Alex: something is wrong. (His eyes turned red and claws grew)

Me: (I was worried) what's wrong. (I channelled his pain)

Alex: my father is trying to telepath me but I had blocked him from that day they chased us away.

Me: I thought only mates were mind linked.

Alex: yhea but an Alpha n Luna are mind linked to all the park members.... Ayyyyyy (he screamed painfully) my father!!

(He said with a low voice looking me in the eyes. I cupped his face and kissed him, then we were one. I felt and heard everything his father was saying.... The Royal blood land was under attack. The attackers were looking for me. I broke the kiss and looked at him, still cupping his face with my both hands. I smiled and planted a little kiss on his lips. "dont worry, they are looking for the devil so she shall appear. We are going to the Royal blood land tonight." I said in his head. He let a little smile be drawn in his face and nodded. I got up and looked at Rick.

"Still in the killing spree? Some one is looking for a bad evil She wolf that her baby is going to wipe out the entire werewolf species." I said joyful. I knew exactly who to tag along when some blood needed to be shed. He didn't disappoint, he smiled right back. Rick was something else.

"you know I would never say no to a killing spree invitation. I hope to see your big brother there."

I laughed and shook my head. We all prepared to leave for Alex's place. I held Rick's hand and compelled him to put a boundary spell trapping Jessy and Onke inside. When it was done Jessy was shocked when she couldn't get out of the room.

"I'm sorry guys, I can't risk you being in trouble. You'll be safe here. You have food and everything you need. No one can get in." I said and left I heard them cursing me as I walked away.

Rick: next time when you want a favour ask Mellisa James, don't plant thoughts in my head. Its rude. I'm not a puppet.

Amanda: hahahaha I'm sorry, she did what?

Alex: can you do that to everyone?

Me: I don't know, I havent tried it on you. And I won't.

Rick: remind me why is my sister and I going to fight your battles?

Me: except the fact that you are a blood thirsty motherfucker. You both owe me. (We all laughed.)

Rick wasn't driving, he was flying the car. We ditched it sayibetha ngenyawo. The moon was out but not full, the stars were gazing down , so it was as light as a day. When we were in the mountain, looking down to the Royal blood territory, the was blood everywhere. Alex changed to his wolf. I stood by him in my human form, cause I was stronger and faster in my human form. Alex was on my right, on my left was Rick, besides him was Amanda.

Rick: the last time we fought side by side was back when I was your bitch...

Me: I'm starting to think you are

Rick: uuuuuuu I'm terrified I am again. (We laughed)

“They asked for me, I’m here. I hope they are ready. Rick make it rain. Hard.”

[03/16, 20:40] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 43

“Basically that was an introduction. Stay, i promise you, you will die a meaningless death or go back to your alpha and tell him the beast is here. He must come and get me himself. By the way, he (pointing at Rick) is a very powerful witch, she is going to die... I could heal her but I am not going to.”

When I finished talking they were all quiet, one of the Red Moon pack man slowly walked to the girl which was slowly dying on the ground. Before picking her up, he looked at me almost as if asking for permission. I looked back at him and nodded my head a little. He picked her up and left. Red moon pack left with their cheeks on their shoulders because of disappointment. When the last person exited I was standing at the veranda with Rick, Alex and Amanda. The Royal blood was there in front of me, Alpha and Luna were out of words... They were too ashamed to say the easiest words “thank you.” Them and ‘us’ where not in good terms because of the previous event. I didn’t know what to do but I felt Moon Goddess created that moment for a reason but words failed my behind.

“ i believe She who saved your lives needs no introduction! She is the very same person you hunted down like an animal. She is the girl you made your life priority to kill. The one you called names and cursed. When my father, your alpha contacted me! My mate left everything to come and save you. You know why? Because you are her people, you are her pack. You are her family. Families fight, I understand this one too is no difference. I am your Prince, your future King and nothing will change that but my people understand this; Moon Goddess made no mistake when she made Mellisa James my mate. This right here, pack of Royal blood is your Princess, your future Queen and we are back home. This is our land, a land we will protect with our last breath. Mellisa James, the one that shouldn’t have been born is your future Luna. SHOW RESPECT.”

I would be telling a raw lie if I sat I wasn’t totally surprised with Alex. Alex was a very gently soul, I was totally surprised and blown away when he stood up like that to his parents and the entire pack. I got a feeling that there’s a lot behind that chocolate brown face. They he finished talking ...his Dad, Alpha knelt down with one knee, his wife followed suit, kneeling with nothing knees. They all knelt down and bowed their heads down.

“You are a Prince, future of Royal blood pack. Your mate is our mate. Your battles are our battles. Your desires are our priority! You are Alex McSmith soul mate of Mellisa James. We

respect you. Future Alpha and Luna, yes we will serve you, yes we will serve you.”

The park said , being led by the Alpha. I asked Alex what they were doing, he told me they were accepting me as their Princess. It was so weird. I didn't grow up among wolves so I had no idea of how things were done.

“Mellisa James, the Royal blood wolves accept you as their Princess. Do you accept them as your burden?” Alpha shouted still looking down. I blinked and looked at Alex, he smiled and shrugged his shoulders.... “i think they are waiting for your answer Queen.” Rick whispered to my ear in a mockery voice and smile of a devil.

“Do you accept my family?” Alex said in my head.

“Yes I accept you as my burden. Like Alex said, Moon Goddess made no mistake by making me his mate. But know this- this whole thing is a two way street. I will not fight your battles while you want me killed. You will not want Mellisa James the she wolf devil only when you want her to fight for you. Its all or nothing, if you accept me as your princess you accept me as I am... An abomination, the one that shouldn't have been born! The she wolf with extraordinary abilities, the one that can touch you and learn everything about your past, can touch you and plant a thought in your head. The one that can command everything including machines, Yes... The one whose blood can heal every wound, her touch can take your pain away. I am the most powerful creature but trust me now, I will never cause you any harm. I am not your enemy, I am not a treat to you. If you accept me as I am, I accept you as my burden. I will be your Queen, your Luna.....and when that happens you will be the most powerful pack. You will be the most fears because you will be untouchable....”

“Yes Princess McSmith.” They all chanted.

“you may all rise.” Alex commanded.

OK the McSmith surname is plain awful. Id choose my surname all day everyday. The parents were still feeling bad about calling a hit on me and their pride was getting the best of them. The rest of the pack came to Alex and I to pay their respects. Then we went to Royal blood Grave yard to bury the members we lost. The funeral was there and then. After we paid our last respect we went back to the Royal house. I saw the Luna hesitantly making her way towards me and my personal pack. She was followed by her husband.

Luna: Princess.

(I looked at her and looked around just to make sure she was talking to me not a person

behind.)

Me: hello Luna... Its Mellisa James.. Or rather MJ

Luna: (she smiled awkwardly) I'm sorry... I believe your father and I owe you an apology.

Me: its OK, I'm used to parents hunting me down to cut my head off. It didn't end well with my parents, if you do that again. It won't end well for you too. Let's just hope it will never happen again. Bygones are bygones.

(I half smiled and hugged her then her husband.)

Alpha: it will never happen again. (looking at Alex) I'm glad you are back home son. I'm sorry for being selfish.

Alex: you thought you were doing what's best for the pack dad.. I can't entirely blame you. (They hugged. He kissed his mother on the cheek.)

Alpha: kids we need to talk.

(Then his eyes narrowed to Amanda and Rick. Rick and Amanda got the message and went inside the house.)

Alex: yes...

Alpha: the future of this pack is now in your hands.

Alex: agreed

(while talking we were walking towards their beautiful garden.)

Alpha: we are the Royal blood line. We can not have witches around. They are not friends. They are not allowed in our territory.

Alex: then that will have to change dad.

Alpha: (surprised by Alex's response.) You are aware of this Alex. Witches are not allowed in our land. They are enemies.

Me: I'm sorry tata but Alex is right. These ones aren't enemies, they are friends, they came here to rescue you. Without Rick you would have lost almost all your pack. I ,Rick, Amanda, Alex, Jessy the earthquake maker and my brother the human are a pack. You don't pick and choose. You know the real question here is what the hell would you do without us because now you are at war with Red moon wolves, who knows what else is coming?...from where I am standing your are not standing a chance, you are ridiculously out numbered. You need us.

(They all looked at each other and looked at me. I shrugged.)

Alpha: you are impossible aren't you? (He shook his head)

Me: (smiling) you have no idea. (In second thought. I looked at Alex) talking about my brother....

Alex: (laughing) hahaha they must be so hating you right now.

Me: babe I know... I have to fetch them.

Luna: no, you were just accepted as a pack's mate... You can't leave the territory for at least 48 hours.

Me: are you serious?

Luna: I'm sorry, we thought you had no where to go that's we didn't tell.

(Alex wrapped his arms around my shoulders. Squeezed me and kissed my forehead.)

Alex: don't worry. I'll bring our brother home.

Me: Rick sealed the entire building. You can't get in.

Alex: I'll go with him. He will undo whatever he did.

Me: alright it looks like I'm not going anywhere. I'll see you later, I have to go to Rick and Amanda.

(I said to Alpha and Luna then Alex and I headed back to the house. We found Rick and Amanda seating with Tyler and Olivia. They were having small talks, I could see it in Rick's face that he was bored to death. His face lit up when he saw me coming for his rescue.)

"Queen."

He said in a mockery voice... one more time. ...

Me: say that like that again you'll find your teeth on the floor.

Rick: ouch, I'm scared.

(I hit his head and sit next to him)

Olivia: so you can really make people think what you want them to think?

Me: me? Yhea...

Olivia: wow how?

(The other members were joining us in the lounge. There were more than ten of us now.)

Me: well, I get in their heads.

Tyler: that's the thing... I don't believe there's any one who is able to get in other people's head.

Me: are you kidding me right now? Your alpha is able to telepath with you... How does that

happen ?

Tyler: that's different, you are claiming to get in people's head and control their thoughts... That's ... That's just unbelievable.

Omega: come on Tyler we all saw what she did to the guy from Red moon pack.

Alicia: I also don't believe she can do that. She's just a wolf.

Me: if my brother was here, he was going to tell you that I'm not just a wolf but I'm an extraordinary she wolf.

Alicia: self proclaimed! Bull!

Amanda: oh baby it looks like you have to show who is boss.

Me: no... My powers aren't toys.

Tyler: because you can't plant thoughts in people's head. Concluded.

(I rolled my eyes back and went to sit next to Alicia. I touched her hand, saw her past and compelled her to kiss Tyler and give him a blow job. )

"I can do this." She smiled and looked at me before pushing back her long curly hair and walked to Tyler.

"you have the power to ." I smiled back.

"what are you doing Alicia." Tyler asked panicking, Alicia stood in front of him, cupped his face and kissed him. Tyler tried to stop her but she couldn't stop. Everything in her was telling her to kiss Tyler and give him a blow job.

"The fuck Alicia, stop. What are you doing maan.!!!" Tyler said. When Alicia was unzipping his trouser I got up and took them out of their misery. I told Alicia to stop, go back to her seat.

"do you believe me now?"

Tyler: you made her to do that?

Me: what do you think? I can make anyone do anything I want... Anywhere anytime.

Alicia: what just happened?

Tyler: that wasn't funny MJ.

Me: it was supposed to be. I'm sorry you didn't find it funny.

Tyler: I hate you. No wonder everyone one seems to want you six feet underground.

Me: oh lovey you'll love me, I don't even need to compel you to and when you do, you won't know how to stop.

(When Tyler was about to talk Alex cut him)

Alex: that's enough tough guy. You wanted her to prove she can get in someone's head, she did. No bad blood. Anyway I would like you to accompany me, I'm going out to the world. You'll love it. (Tyler smiled and nodded.) Rick we are going to fetch Jessie and OJ.

Rick: yes King.

Me: Rick behave yourself.

(He winked at me, I rolled my eyes. I telepath Alex not to trust Rick, to always be on his guts and most importantly to keep my brother safe. They left along with Tyler and Omega.)

Amanda: don't you find it weird that Rick and Alex are friends? That Alex isn't jealous not even a little.

Me: at first I found it weird but now I know. Nothing can break a mate bond, not even your charming evil brother.

Olivia: wait, no I didn't hear it right. You dated the cute guy with blue eyes?

Amanda: they almost had a baby.

(Olivia came closer... Getting more curious by the second)

Me: that doesn't count. It was before I met my mate.

Olivia: but you and your baby daddy stay friends. Wow

Me: we lost the baby, its complicated really.

Olivia: I'm so sorry.

(That statement made her to change the subject.)

Olivia: Amanda right? So how did you meet MJ?

Amanda: like she said its complicated. The blue eyes witch, is my little brother. At first we wanted to kill MJ but look at us now ... If anyone wanna kill Mellisa they'd have to go through me and my brother and i see no chances of surviving that....

(We were all startled by someone shouting "Joseph" ..... "who the hell is calling our Alpha by his name?!" Olivia murmured. We all got out side. It was already late and starting to be dark. When we got outside we found the Red moon pack out side, their Alpha holding the girl, she was now having a seizure... And bleeding very slowly...



"Solomon you are not welcome here. We just buried our people, the one you killed." Our Alpha exclaimed.

"We are not here to fight. You know I'd never come to you for help if I wasn't desperate. This is my daughter. The only child I have. She has been like this the whole day. I heard the abnormal She wolf can cure her. My baby is dying Joseph. I know you don't owe me anything, I owe you instead. You have every right to kill me right now, right here. I plea you your Highness! King of the Royal house to cure my daughter. In return, we will fight by your side, I will recognise you as Alpha. What used to be my pack will be your pack. After your she wolf has cured my daughter there will be no Red moon wolves.... These werewolf you see here will be yours, they will belong to Royal blood. All I ask is your daughter in law to heal my daughter." Solomon said in pain and fear of losing his love. I knew that pain, he reminded me of my baby. The baby I never got to hold in my arms. How much more in the pain when you have seen her face, touched her skin and held her. How much more is the pain of losing a child when you have seen it. Regardless of everything, when I looked up to the sky I saw rainbow ☁️<3

Happy human rights day babies. Don't forget to like, comment and share.... Wait... who is planning to buy my book?

[03/16, 20:41] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 44

Solomon who was holding his dying daughter reminded me of my baby. The baby I never got to hold in my arms. How much more is the pain when you have seen her face, touched her skin and held her. How much more is the pain of losing a child when you have seen her. Regardless of everything, when I looked up to the sky I saw a rainbow. That was a sign that things will get better. For the first time in what felt like forever, I had a place to call home. I had a room to call mine. I missed that. There is a difference between being chased on the run and being attack in your home. Now whoever was to come for me I'd smell them from miles away.

After Solomon said his peace it was quiet, Royal blood Alpha looked at me. "can we trust them, my child?" he asked with his eyes still fixed on me.

Me: (shaking my head) absolutely not. (They all looked at me in disappointment, I saw tears trickling down Solomon's cheek as he slowly picked up his daughter which was 90% dead already.)

Me: but that doesn't mean we can't give them a chance to prove themselves.

(I modelled to Solomon, looked at him while biting my wrist. I fed his daughter my blood. Held her hand and took some of her pain. She started coughing. I saw a spark of relief in her father's eyes. )

Me: put her down.

Solomon: thank you She wolf, (looking at his healing daughter) this is incredible.

Me: don't thank me, just keep your end of the deal....

(I walked away as their pack was surrounding Solomon witnessing the previously known as impossible. I went back to the veranda and watched them as they gathered around Solomon. I could hear her heart beat slowly picking up. "You did it!" Joseph – my Alpha and father in law said, whispering. I just nodded.

"Solomon I suggest you take your daughter in side, lay her on the couch. She is going to sleep and when she wakes up, she will be as good as new." I shouted. He didn't waste time, he did as instructed. When he came back to his pack it was said that on the following day a ritual where Solomon hands his pack to Royal Blood alpha will be conducted. After the time was set, Red moon pack went to their home but Solomon was left, waiting for his daughter to wake up.

"What's her name?"

I asked Solomon, sitting next to him.

Solo: Migal, her name is Migal.

(He said stealing glances at me like he was ashamed of something.)

Me: don't worry, I won't bite. All the people in my life once wanted to kill me. I'm that thing that everyone wants, I seemed to be trending ever since I turned... I won't hold it against you. (I said playfully but as the words left my mouth it registered how true it is... Jessy, Amanda, Rick, Royal blood wolves... They all tried to kill me.)

Solo: but somehow you seemed to survive it all.

Me: because I am a monster that y'all should be scared of. Tell me, why did you want me dead.

Solo: I was hoping you won't ask that question. (He looked at me, then to his daughter)

Me: but I just did and I'm scared you have to answer.

Solo: we heard about Naidoo's vision. That woman was never wrong.

Me: oh? What exactly did you hear? Why did you attack the Royal instead of me? You knew they

wanted me dead as much as you did...or still you.. I'll never know.

Solo: Power!

(I stared thinking he was still going to continue but dololo)

Me: power?

Solo: yes power. I wanted to take the Royal land...

Me: I guess things ended the other way then...

(Migal... Solomon's daughter woke up like she was chased by demons on the other side)

Migal: am I in hell?

Solo: no but not entirely wrong... Royal blood land can be referred to as hell.

(They hugged. Migal couldn't believe she was alive. She kept touching her face.)

Migal: I thought I was going to die...

Solo: you almost died angel, she cured you...(pointing at me)

Migal: (her facial expression changed) the evil She wolf? Why would she heal me? (She looked pissed)

Solo: (smiling) cause I told her what i wanted them to hear.

(Before I could take in what he meant I felt his sharp teeth digging on my neck! Migal's claws rearranging my stomach! I was caught off guard, for the first time in a long time I let my guard down and once again I was bit for trusting man kind...well, werewolf kind! Solomon hand his strong arm wrapped around my neck. When I tried to unfree my self I saw his thought, he would rather die than let me live for I was the end of werewolf species, Naidoo wasn't the only one who saw this, Red Moon pack advisor had a vision about me... It was said I will hunt my own kind! It was said I will become literally power hungry and I won't be able to stop myself. When I kill a werewolf i will take it's power and develop a new ability! Healing and mind control were the beginning! All of them should not trust me. According to them I had to be stopped before I even started! I was an abomination that shouldn't have been born. Solomon gave up his life, he new by killing me, the Royal blood wolves would kill him. But would they? They wanted me dead even before this Solomon guy came to the picture! That's the last thought I had in mind before I felt my neck snap.

They aren't loyal to Mellisa... How do they expect her to be loyal to the?

Solomon 'killed' Mellisa...

The Royal blood pack?

Rick?

Alex?

Jessy?

Amanda?

Onke?

What are they going to say/do when they learn about this betrayal! How is Amanda going to explain this which happened under noise? Moon Goddess knows how I can't wait for the next insert...

If you are loyal to me, I will be loyal to you.... I know its short... But its all I could put together in few mins ... Goodnightini my Supernaturals ☹️☹️

[03/16, 20:42] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 45

3rd person's POV

For some odd reasons the Royal blood pack seemed not to be bothered with Solomon's presence in their home. They bought the truce speech little did they know it was a scam. Mellisa was all alone with Solomon and Migal when they snapped her neck and made her bleed on the floor. Poor blonde sweet Amanda who hadn't had a shag in forever was flirting with one of the Royal blood moon member, enjoying the attention from boys even though she knew she didn't stand a chance, even the beautiful red berry lips Frank who was giving her an attention was going to meet his soul mate one day and nothing else will ever matter! But hey, Amanda was hoping for a supernatural hectic shag not marriage. They were playing a pool table in the pack house, far from Royal house... Royal house was for Luna and Alpha and their children.

When the Alpha and Luna had said their final goodbyes to their lost members, they walked back to the Royal house, pleased by how a tragedy has worked out to their favour. As the Red moon pack was going to officially join their pack on the following day, their pack was going to be doubled, they were not going to be just Royal, they were going to be the most powerful pack werewolf species had ever seen! Mood Goddess is not a fool! So they thought before flipping the front door open on the Royal house. What regretted them was beyond what they had

imagined when they were informed that Evil was coming. Solomon and his daughter were covered in blood, Mellisa James was laying lifelessly on the couch! Luna stood there, with her eyes wide open, not believing the balls Solomon had, Killing a Princess in her land.

“Oh please I saved you the trouble of killing your own daughter. Close the door then we can talk.” Solomon said with so much arrogance in his voice. Both Alpha and Luna couldn’t move a muscle! How were they going to explain the death of their son's soul mate? No one had survived losing a mate in history, they knew their son was not going to survive this! A mate bond was unbreakable, not even by death. You either live in agony or die with your mate. But, laying there was the very same she wolf who they wanted to kill, regardless of what it’d do to their son. Laying there breathless was the very same she wolf who was said she was going to bring death to all werewolves. She was the one that shouldn’t have born, so, was it really a loss to the Royal blood pack.

“do you realise what you just did Solomon?!” the Alpha asked still not sure how to react.

Solo: oh come on you wanted her dead just as much, but you are a coward that’s why you hunted her down but you failed to cut her head off. If you close that door, I promise you this now; our deal is still on the table but if you kill me there will never be peace between the Royal blood pack and Red moon pack. Without Mellisa you don’t stand a chance.

(Luna and Alpha looked at each other. Alpha slowly closed the door, his eyes still fixed on his wife. His wife slowly nodded her head. By the look of things they only accepted Mellisa as their Princess because they didn’t have a choice, she was the weapon they needed to defeat their enemies ... But when they go to sleep, she was the weapon they feared. This was their chance to sleep at night. Because of the visions Naidoo had, Mellisa was a threat to all werewolves creatures. Alpha shifted his eyes from Luna and looked at Solomon and Migal)

Alpha: (he took a deep breath before doing what he did best- betraying his son) what are we going to do with the body?

Solo: we burry her. Don’t feel bad Joseph, she had to die, this is for the best for all of us, our children and the next generation. You saw what this girl was capable of! She wasn’t one of us, she was not a werewolf!

Luna: don’t explain your evil deeds Solomon, we can talk about that after we figured out what to do with the body! We know this is for the best but it wasn’t your call. (She walked to Mellisa and looked at her carefully) oh My God! She really is dead.

Alpha: I thought she was immortal.

Solomon: noone is really immortal.

Migal: dad, y'all can have a chat after we get rid of her body. Anyone can walk in any time.

Solo: Joseph this is your land.

Alpha: wrap her around that blanket, Migal go to the bathroom, get the cleaning tools and clean the blood. Luna, in our bedroom under the bed you'll find a black huge bag.

(They followed the instructions. In a blink of an eye the murder scene was clean, it was as if Mellisa was never there. They sneaked through the back door, went to the grave yard and buried her there! After closing the grave, all four of them looked at each other, their eyes making a promise to keep the secret... To take it to the grave. Solomon and Migal went back to their home. Luna and Alpha went to take a shower, they couldn't even look at each other. They knew they betrayed Mellisa right after they promised to keep her safe. They were a disgrace for being two face. After they took a shower, they prayed to Moon Goddess asking for forgiveness. A monster whispered to their heads that killing Mellisa James was for the best. Naidoo didn't die for nothing. Alex had to suck it up. Luna turned and looked at her husband, for the first time in a long time, they cuddled, they fell asleep in each other's arms.

On the other side;

Alex, Rick, Tyler and Omega were almost at the motel. It was already late, As usual, Rick wasn't driving he was flying the car. Proving to the rest of the guys that he could drive faster than any of them could run with their supernatural speed and he was right!

"duuude did you see MJ's speed?" Omenga said.

Tyler: she is impossible fast.

Rick: she is out of the ordinary.

Alex: Rick, Rick pull over... (He shouted sounding like he was having a panic attack.)

Rick: hahaha what? A Prince can't handle a fast car? We are almost there buddy..

Alex: I SAID PULL OVEEEEEER (he shouted in his commanding animal voice! Rick couldn't argue with that! They were all startled, Rick stopped the car! Alex's eyes were bright deep red, he was turning.)

Omega: dude what's wrong? What's wrong Prince?

(Alex couldn't breathe, he got out of the car with his right hand on his chest, he fell on the

ground with his knees, looked up to the sky and howled sooo loud that Omega and Tyler had to close their ears.

"Mellisaaaaaa!" he shouted!

"calm down Alex! Alex" Rick shouted, But Alex wasn't listening, Rick ended up giving him a headache, Alex went from howling to screaming like a bitch then Rick stopped! Alex was back to his normal self, he sat down, put his hand across his chest. With watery eyes he looked at Rick. Rick knelt before him, they stared at each other, a street light above them gave them the light they needed. Somehow Rick knew that look, he got too scared to ask what was wrong, fearing the answer might be what he feared most. It could be what his ears didn't want to hear, his heart wouldn't handle.

"She is dead, Rick." Alex murmured.

Omega: who is dead? Duude you are scaring the living crap out of me.

Alex: my mate, my mate is dead. I can feel it in every fibre of my body. I can feel her pain, they killed, they killed my mate.

Rick: (Rick got up slowly shaking his head) no, no Mellisa can't die! She can not die! Mellisa James is immortal.

(Rick stopped for a second and looked at Alex, the truth was written all over his eyes. Eyes never lie.)

Rick: ( he slowly closed his eyes and open them again, a tear escaped his left side eye) you are telling the truth, aren't you?

(Alex didn't respond instead he unleashed his wolf form and ran back to the Royal blood land.

Rick, like a good almost baby daddy... He told Omega and Tyler to get in the car. More than anything Mellisa wanted was her brother to be safe. They drove to the Motel, no words were exchanged all the way to the Motel. When they arrived, Rick put down the seal and went to the 2nd floor. Jessy and Onke were trilled to see him.

"Finally, we were suffocating in here. As for Mellisa I'm going to kill her black ass." Jessy shouted when Ricked appeared to the door.

"worry not. It looks like some has already done that for you." Rick replied, carelessly.

Onke and Jessy packed their stuff. Onke not forgetting his old journals ... They paid no attention to what Rick said. Thinking its one of his dry jokes. When they were done packing they headed

for the car. Off they drove to the Royal blood land. Rick was silent all the way, he focused on the road, probably imagining all the ways he was going to punish whoever ended Mellisa's life.

Midnight Alex was already to a place he called home. There was no light in the Royal house, his parents were peacefully asleep after covering a murder of their son's mate. There were still giggles in the pack house. Rick changed to his human form, took a towel from a laundry line, wrapped it around and went to the Pack house. Amanda was drinking beer, letting Frank to touch her flat ass. Alex went to Amanda and asked where Mellisa is, when she last saw her! Amanda choked in her words, realising she last saw Mellisa before Alex and the guys left.

"whats wrong? She was in the Royal house with Solomon." She answered, terrified. Her voice almost shaking.

Alex: something is wrong. I can feel it.

(He walked to he Royal house, Amanda, Frank and Olicia followed. He kicked the front door and went to his parent's bedroom.)

"didnt I teach you to knock before getting in our bedroom." Alpha said, switching on his side lamp.

Alex: where is Mellisa, dad.

Alpha: I , I don't know. Why would you ask your mate from me? You are mind linked. Why don't you telepath her?

Alex: I tried, she is not responding dad... I can feel it. She is dead. What happened to my mate?? (He half shouted)

Luna: (pretending she was waking from a deep sleep) stop shouting... What do you mean she is dead? Mellisa is immortal. (She brushed her eyes)

Alex: you know how this looks to me right? When did you last see her?

Amanda: Prince, we have to go to the Red moon land. Solomon was the last person who saw Mellisa.

Luna: no, no... Solomon left with his daughter before dawn, I saw Mellisa, she said she was coming to you to the pack house. Didn't she arrive?

Amana: does it look like she arrived? Come one now. (She threw her hands on the air, dead irritated. )

Alpha; alright, alright we are going to have search party in the morning, okay?

Alex: i cant wait that long dad! If mom was missing were you going to wait for 5 hours to look for her? Amanda you are a witch, can't you do a location spell!



Alpha: she can try but it will not work here, this whole area was locked by a very powerful witch which dead along time ago. That's why we have stayed this long with no trouble of hunters or witches. We are invincible.

(Amanda looked at Joseph and rolled her eyes. She pulled Alex to the dinning room. Luna, Alpha followed, they watched with their fingers crossed as Amanda was doing a location spell! Nothing, she found nothing, Mellisa was no where. She thought of what this would do to her insane brother, when she remembered how his little brother grieve she threw a glass to the wall... "where the fuck are you Mellisa." She said through her closed teeth.

Like a caring father in law, Joseph woke up all his pack members and a search party started in an hour. Alex got dressed before going to the search party. They crossed their territory boarder, asked the Red moon pack for help. Solomon- Alpha of Red moon was more than willing to search for the missing Princess. Of course, they searched and searched and came back with nothing.

After they have covered all the possible places Mellisa would have went to to the woods they went back to the Royal land. Joseph addressed his pack, promising his son to do whatever it takes to find his mate... "besides, Mellisa is extraordinary. She is more than capable of taking care of herself. Today we are combining the packs. Solomon is going to accept me as his Alpha, after that we will be untouchable." He concluded. Alex couldn't believe his father was choosing power over family. Deep down he knew Mellisa was dead, half of his heart was dead, it was heavy! He headed for the door leaving his dad making promises we wasn't going to keep. When he opened the hall door, he pumped into Rick.

Alex's eyes narrowed to Onke, MJ's brother... He knew if there was anyone who understood his pain, it was Onke. He faked a smile, Onke nodded his head in return. Onke and Jessy were up to speed, Rick tried to find Mellisa but he couldn't .

Likewise, Rick made his grand entrance to the hall. Jessy, Onke, Omega and Tyler followed behind him. Alex stood by the door, waiting for something to make him smile. He knew with Rick there was never a dull moment.

Alpha: this is werewolves business. Witches are not allowed here. Please respect that.

Rick: ohhhh I just find it interesting, your Princess 'disappeared' last night, today you expanding your army.

(He giggled. He jumped and stood on the table for everyone to see him)

Rick: you know, I thought we were going to be best of friends. I thought things were finally

falling in place but clearly I was wrong. Mellisa James, the one and only MJ! She is dead, I don't know how because I was under the impression that she can not die, that she was immortal, but clearly I was fooled! Alex can feel that she is dead. The thing is; Mellisa can't kill herself and one of you here knows what happened! One of you here knows exactly what happened to Mellisa and where her body is. Confess your sins now and I will make your death be very quick and painless. Keep quiet then I assure you I will hurt you in ways that even your wildest imagination can not imagine. Before you inhale another breath let me introduce my self. My name is Rick, the greatest evil, not like Mellisa James who was trying to be good. I seek no redemption, there's nothing I find more appealing than watching a man begging for his life. Confession; in 5, 4, 3...,2

\*

\*

\*

\*

\*

\*

On the other side, Mellisa James was slooowly healing. She couldn't die by a silver knife, what made them to think they'd kill her by bites and scars!!

[03/16, 20:43] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 46

Alex's POV

I have heard about it....

But I never thought about it...

I have seen a person losing a mate...

But I never put myself in their shoes...

They all feared the pain of losing a mate

But I was worry free because my mate was immortal, she was the most wanted, some wanted to crucify her, some wanted to sacrifice her. This was because some they feared her while others praised her.

You can either die with your mate or you can live with an agonising pain. You can live with a pain that will keep you up all night, a pain that will unleash the animal in you.

I couldn't even feel my heart beating, it was beating softly, almost silent. I looked at Onke and Jessy, they were worried about me more than they were worried about themselves. I didn't know what to say to them, I didn't know what to think. Mellisa James couldn't just die, someone or something had to be responsible for her death. I had a decision to make... To either die with my mate or live with the pain. Living wishing I hadn't left her alone, wishing I hadn't come with her to this land in the first place, I should have known the danger I was putting her into. I was so naive to think things were going to be different now.

Right there, I made a decision. I wasn't going to kill myself, that's for cowards, I was a Prince of Royal blood wolves....neither was I going to spend the rest of my life in agony, feeling sorry for myself, wishing I hadn't done this and that! I wasn't a master of time and space, I couldn't fix history but one thing for sure I'd damn fix the future or at least destroy it. Mellisa wasn't there, dying without avenging her would be a spit on her grave. I wasn't like Rick, with my humanity I wasn't capable of killing with no remorse. So I built this wall around my heart that protected me, it avoided me from feeling anything not even the pain of losing my mate. It was there but the hope of avenging her numbed it.

I watched Rick standing on the table so that everyone could see him. This had to be good.

"you know, I thought we were going to be best of friends. I thought things were finally falling in place but clearly I was wrong. Mellisa James, the one and only MJ! She is dead, I don't know how because I was under the impression that she can not die, that she was immortal, but clearly I was fooled! Alex can feel that she is dead. The thing is; Mellisa can't kill herself and one of you here knows what happened! One of you here knows exactly what happened to Mellisa and where her body is. Confess your sins now and I will make your death be very quick and painless. Keep quiet then I assure you I will hurt you in ways that even your wildest imagination can not imagine. Before you inhale another breath let me introduce myself. My name is Rick, the greatest evil, not like Mellisa James who was trying to be good. I seek no redemption, there's nothing I find more appealing than watching a man begging for his life. Confession; in 5, 4, 3...,2.....1" he said with his famous devilish goofy smile on his face.

He was right, if one knew what happened to Mellisa it was my pack or/ and Red moon pack. They were the ones left with Mellisa when we left and they were the ones who wanted her dead in the first place.

No one answered.

Rick: the heck....

(He shrugged his shoulders, rubbed his forefinger and his thumb together. The guy who was in front of him started coughing, he was sweating, he fell on the ground and half-turned. Every one

stood still. We were all aware of what witches were capable of.)

Rick: see? Your friend here will be forever trapped in this form: half wolf and half human... Oh don't forget the excruciating pain. He cant move, talk or do anything but his mind is wide awake... Did your mind think of that? Oh there's more. Shall I continue or you are now willing to speak? I can do this all day, my next victims are both Alphas.

My dad: Mellisa was our Princess, we are just as sad and shocked about her death. Killing us will not bring her back. Listen to me son, I need you to leave right now, undo what ever you did to Mike or I will cut you in half... Remember this; you are alone and I have two packs behind me. You don't stand a chance.

Me: like hell he is alone....

(I turned around to the girl of my pack that was next to me, I dag my hand in her chest and came out with her heart. The look on my parents was just priceless. I could do with this, more than anything, it was entertaining )

Me: did the Prince just do that? I'm sure that's the question in your heads right now. The good, gentle Alex just killed a member of his pack. A woman. This is to announce that I am no longer your Prince, you betrayed me. I don't care if you killed Mellisa or Not but you were supposed to protect her. How can a Princess be killed in her land? Her home? Surrounded by her people and not even a single person saw a glimpse of what happened? Unless of course they are the ones who killed her. Its you against the two of us.... (I said the last words slowly and dropped the heart I holding on the floor)

Amanda: make that three...

Jessy: how about four?

Me: what have you done father? What did you see?

My dad: nothing I swear, how dare you turn against your own people? What have you become son! I can't even recognise you.

Me: funny how people hate the taste of their own medicine. You betrayed me. Olivia? Matt? All of you Royal blood pack, I thought you were my family.

Olivia: I swear to you Alex, I didn't see anything. I was with Amanda at the pack house, Mellisa was at the royal house.

Me: I wish I believed you. Maybe you were destructing Amanda while getting Mellisa killed.

Olivia: Alex, its me...

Me: (i cut her short) Rick would you make her not speak again, like ever... In fact we had enough talking. Speak now or

Rick: we will help you be silent forever.

Solo: you can kill half of us but the other half will skin you alive.

Me: hahaha are you sure? Let me check... Jessy remind me again, what is it that you can do.

Jessy: I can move the earth beneath our feet. Some call me an earthquake maker.

Me: do you mind showing us, honey?

Jessy: it will be the my pleasure Sir.

Me: they are all yours sweetheart. Onke, you can wait outside...

Onke: no, I wanna see their faces....

Rick: outside Onke, now. We don't want any mistakes....

(Amanda walked Onke outside. The werewolves had noticed that he was a better victim, Amanda was just as nasty as his brother. All those who attempted to hurt Onke were thrown to the ground or got their blood boiled by a single look. Jessy closed her eyes, her hands were shaking, she started to raise them and the floor started shaking and cracking. Rick and I were next to her making sure no body got closer. Amanda was at the door making sure nobody ran out side. Jessy closed her hands to fists a hole was dag but it wasn't deep enough. Everything was upside down, the chairs, the tables... Everything. The werewolves were on the ground pleading for their lives.

"stop, stop I will tell you the truth."

Someone shouted, it was dusty and noisy but I could see and hear... Thanks to my werewolf super eyesight and hearing. I told Jessy to stop, someone finally had balls to speak up. It was Solomon's daughter.

Solomon: Migal what do you think you are doing?

Migal: its okay daddy, they will not know i ratted them out. Its not fair that we all die for their sin.

Rick: speak before i make you wish your mother had kept her legs closed...

Migal: lets get one thing straight. You need me or youll never know what happened to Mellisa. The one yall seem to do whatever it takes to avenge

Rick: i will not ask twice

Migal: alright, alright....Gold stars pack... They took Mellisa. Every pack wanted her dead okay?

Let me warn you, They will all come together to fight you.

Me: Gold stars pack? But it begs the question; why didnt you say from the beginning to save us the trouble...

Jessy: and how the bloody hell did you know?

Amanda: and how the fuck can we trust you?

Migal: (he looks at Amanda) you don't. (Then she looks at Jessy, Rick and me) how I know is the same reason why I didn't tell. I am in love with Alpha's son.

Me: don't worry, I will personally make sure his death is slowly and nasty.

(Jessy, Rick, Migal and I walked outside of the hall. Rick rubbed his hands together.)

Migal: what are you doing?

Rick: I don't trust you, I have to prepare for the worst. They are trapped here, they can not come out and no one can get in. Better be not pulling a prank.

Migal: if you don't undo whatever you did I am not going to show you were the Gold stars live.

Me: I know where they live.

Migal: they moved. You need me....

(I snapped her neck...I didn't want to hear anymore of her "you need me" speech.)

Jessy: did you just kill our only lead?

Me: didnt you hear that? ...her voice was annoying. Besides she is going to wake up in an hour or so.

Amanda: my, my, what happened to the Prince to be this fun all of a 'SUNDAY'

[03/16, 20:44] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 47

3rd person's point of view

Alex MicSmith got far away from his sanity at each moment. He built a wall that protected him

from the excruciating pain of losing a mate, in history, no one has ever survived it. But him, the prince of Royal blood wolves found a way, he found comfort in thoughts of what he was going to do to those who killed Mellisa James..... In that thought, he breathed and talked being driven by one purpose- revenge! But he was a dead man, everything he lived for was no more, he got far away from who he was! In the process of escaping reality he lost himself. The walls around him got thicker and thicker! And he got too deep, all that made him a human was turned off! His animal side took over! All his actions fed his werewolf basic need – kill. The handsome, heart of Gold prince was no more! Only if they known, they would have reconsidered their deeds! Mellisa was out to get no one, in fear they killed her! Without knowing they were creating an angry creature that his purpose was only to cause them pain.

Rick and Amanda were more than impressed with the new Prince persona because he now fitted perfectly in their world where “nothing was more appealing as seeing a man beg for his life” so would Rick say. Onke and Jessy were worried about Alex, they knew if Mellisa could see from the otherside.... Seeing Alex like this would hurt her! But there was absolutely nothing they could do for he cared about nothing, no one but his revenge!

Migal who kept going on about how the crew needed her, her big mouth caused her neck to be snapped when everyone was least expecting it. Alex was someone else, honestly he was ‘something’ else, that sounds more fitting....

“So how long are we going to wait for her to wake up.” Onke said trying his best not to sound irritated to the new found beast, but irritation was vivid to his voice. By this time they were sitting on the rocks, next to the bush waiting for Migal to wake up.

Alex glanced at Onke and shrugged his shoulders.... And that’s all Onke got as a response.

Amanda: its getting late, Alex you said you know where this Golden stars pack live. We have wasted enough time on this girl, we should go.

Alex: this girl could be easily leading us to a trap! If that’s her mind game I want her to be there and witness everything! From killing her boyfriend and ripping her heart out from her chest!

“That’s scary, I’m terrified” Migal said sarcastically, opening her eyes and stretching neck!

Jessy: finally...

Migal: was this really necessary? You...

Rick: (cutting her short) zip it little wolf, your big mouth is what got you in this trouble in the first place. Now get up and lead the way!

Migal: with pleasure.

(She got up and leaded the way with pride. Only she knew what she was cooking inside! Rick and the rest foolishly followed hoping their sore hearts and broken souls were going to be healed by killing what they were led to believe was an enemy! They hoped they would find peace in killing Golden stars pack! How could they be so naive and trust everything coming out of Migal's mouth! How could they be so naive to follow she who once wanted to kill them, she who they trapped her father and her pack in a hall! How could they be so foolish to allow their emotions to cloud their judgment! To make such decision while still suffering an emotional pain!

They followed with ease with their guts down thinking they were the attackers! Thinking all was going to go in their terms! Foolish!

Little did they know, they were a beautiful gift wrapped in a gold paper wrap ready to be handed over to Simon, alpha of Golden stars pack. He was impatiently waiting for their arrival! His pack surrounded the place Migal was leading Rick and the others to. They didn't even smell it coming! When they were alert, they where already surrounded by almost hundreds of werewolves! Migal shook her head and laughed! She went to kiss a young boy called Tim, and Simon gave her a kiss on the cheek and congratulated her on pulling 'it' off!

I am moving fast aren't I? For you I'll back up a bit.... Back at the Royal blood pack house, when Jessy was busy setting everything upside down, Migal got smart!! Yes, she didn't lie about everything and that's what good liars do! They tell half truth so that their plan would be more than perfect. Migal was in love with the son of Golden stars alpha! Tim, son of Simon! What they seemed to forget when Migal mentioned this is that the only time in their world someone would claim to be in love is when they have found their mate. Migal was Tim's mate. That means they were mind linked! They could telepath!

When Migal saw the eyes of death she telepath her mate and they planned a trap! She told Rick what they desperately wanted to hear and they walked right where Migal wanted them. The death of Mellisa was to be celebrated by all werewolf species, so whoever wanted to avenge her was up against all werewolf species!

All this time Migal was playing them, she just needed them to keep her alive till they arrived to the Golden stars territory and her mission was achieved with A onestar kunjalo nje!

After she got a cheek kiss from her father in law to be she looked at truck-struck Rick, Alex, Onke and Jessy....

"I honestly thought you were smarter than this! Goshhh" she said before giggling.



“you trapped us, bitch! I will kill you all!!” Rick shouted, raising his hands and silently commanding the stars above to make it rain but nothing happen. He looked around, in shock and anger! He looked at Migal trying to boil her blood but dololo! Nothing happened. Realising Rick's powers were not working, Jessy tried to move the ground, Amanda tried a fire spell, Alex wanted to speed to Migal! In disappointment .... All their supernatural powers didn't work, they were powerless! Golden stars pack was in stitches, laughing their eyes out at the sight of the most powerful witch powerless! Finally they revealed their secretes....and this is why Alex wasn't able to smell them...

“what have you done to us” Rick shouted in frustration.

“Oh I think I should have told you! In Golden stars territory you are ripped off all your supernatural powers and you can not perform magic. We have what we call “tigers” with their family around, you are nothing but Normal, defenseless human beings, you are weak. Only my pack have their abilities, its over for all of you.” Simon explained before he turned to the gates of his house. Alex looked around in disbelief, it ended too soon! The “tigers” waved their hands to them and followed Simon. Tigers were different species, their power was to blocke all supernatural powers... To be 'unblocked' by their presence a ritual had to be done, you had to accept them as your family. They were lonely and lacked sense of belonging! Simon found them and accepted as family! Since then he lived a happy life.

Alex, Amanda, Onke and Jessy were thrown in a hole, petrol was poured all over them! Alex smiled and closed his eyes, thinking he would be with his mate on the other side. Rick sat down, feeling proud of him self thinking at least on his last day he fought a good fight, for a change he wasn't a perpetrator. Amanda sang her favourite song.... Angel's cry... She looked at her little brother and smiled. What is the best way of dying than dying with your loved ones. Jessy held Onke's hand and quizzed it. Then a man with a lighter showed up, he played with it... Turning it on and off! Onke who had been trying to keep it together let out a final loud cry, he let himself cry for all the pain he endured, all the worst he witnessed! He opened his heart and let it all out little did he know that his painful cry was what was going to save them! It was a ticket out of that hole....

Mellisa James felt it! The she wolf felt the pain, the anger overwhelmed herv and sped the healing. she howled so loud, the ground was shaking and the grave opened! When she got out of the grave, completely healed! Only then she noticed why they feared her, the power she possessed was beyond measure! And they stepped in her toes. The devil she wolf was back from the dead

\*

\*

[03/17, 08:24] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 47

3rd person's point of view

Alex MicSmith got far away from his sanity at each moment. He built a wall that protected him from the excruciating pain of losing a mate, in history, no one has ever survived it. But him, the prince of Royal blood wolves found a way, he found comfort in thoughts of what he was going to do to those who killed Mellisa James..... In that thought, he breathed and talked being driven by one purpose- revenge! But he was a dead man, everything he lived for was no more, he got far away from who he was! In the process of escaping reality he lost himself. The walls around him got thicker and thicker! And he got too deep, all that made him a human was turned off! His animal side took over! All his actions fed his werewolf basic need – kill. The handsome, heart of Gold prince was no more! Only if they known, they would have reconsidered their deeds! Mellisa was out to get no one, in fear they killed her! Without knowing they were creating an angry creature that his purpose was only to cause them pain.

Rick and Amanda were more than impressed with the knew Prince persona because he now fitted perfectly in their world where “nothing was more appealing as seeing a man beg for his life” so would Rick say. Onke and Jessy were worried about Alex, they knew if Mellisa could see from the otherside.... Seeing Alex like this would hurt her! But there was absolutely nothing they could do for he cared about nothing, no one but his revenge!

Migal who kept going on about how the crew needed her, her big mouth caused her neck to be snapped when everyone was least expecting it. Alex was someone else, honestly he was ‘something’ else, that sounds more fitting....

“So how long are we going to wait for her to wake up.” Onke said trying his best not to sound irritated to the new found beast, but irritation was vivid to his voice. By this time they were sitting on the rocks, next to the bush waiting for Migal to wake up.

Alex glanced at Onke and shrugged his shoulders.... And that’s all Onke got as a response.

Amanda: its getting late, Alex you said you know where this Golden stars pack live. We have wasted enough time on this girl, we should go.

Alex: this girl could be easily leading us to a trap! If that's her mind game I want her to be there and witness everything! From killing her boyfriend and ripping her heart out from her chest!

"That's scary, I'm terrified" Migal said sarcastically, opening her eyes and stretching neck!

Jessy: finally...

Migal: was this really necessary? You...

Rick: (cutting her short) zip it little wolf, your big mouth is what got you in this trouble in the first place. Now get up and lead the way!

Migal: with pleasure.

(She got up and led the way with pride. Only she knew what she was cooking inside! Rick and the rest foolishly followed hoping their sore hearts and broken souls were going to be healed by killing what they were led to believe was an enemy! They hoped they would find peace in killing Golden stars pack! How could they be so naive and trust everything coming out of Migal's mouth! How could they be so naive to follow she who once wanted to kill them, she who they trapped her father and her pack in a hall! How could they be so foolish to allow their emotions to cloud their judgment! To make such decision while still suffering an emotional pain!

They followed with ease with their guts down thinking they were the attackers! Thinking all was going to go in their terms! Foolish!

Little did they know, they were a beautiful gift wrapped in a gold paper wrap ready to be handed over to Simon, alpha of Golden stars pack. He was impatiently waiting for their arrival! His pack surrounded the place Migal was leading Rick and the others to. They didn't even smell it coming! When they were alert, they were already surrounded by almost hundreds of werewolves! Migal shook her head and laughed! She went to kiss a young boy called Tim, and Simon gave her a kiss on the cheek and congratulated her on pulling 'it' off!

I am moving fast aren't I? For you I'll back up a bit.... Back at the Royal blood pack house, when Jessy was busy setting everything upside down, Migal got smart!! Yes, she didn't lie about everything and that's what good liars do! They tell half truth so that their plan would be more than perfect. Migal was in love with the son of Golden stars alpha! Tim, son of Simon! What they seemed to forget when Migal mentioned this is that the only time in their world someone would claim to be in love is when they have found their mate. Migal was Tim's mate. That means they were mind linked! They could telepath!

When Migal saw the eyes of death she telepath her mate and they planned a trap! She told Rick what they desperately wanted to hear and they walked right where Migal wanted them. The

death of Mellisa was to be celebrated by all werewolf species, so whoever wanted to avenge her was up against all werewolf species!

All this time Migal was playing them, she just needed them to keep her alive till they arrived to the Golden stars territory and her mission was achieved with A onestar kunjalo nje!

After she got a cheek kiss from her father in law to be she looked at truck-struck Rick, Alex, Onke and Jessy....

"I honestly thought you were smarter than this! Goshhh" she said before giggling.

"you trapped us, bitch! I will kill you all!!" Rick shouted, raising his hands and silently commanding the stars above to make it rain but nothing happen. He looked around, in shock and anger! He looked at Migal trying to boil her blood but dololo! Nothing happened. Realising Rick's powers were not working, Jessy tried to move the ground, Amanda tried a fire spell, Alex wanted to speed to Migal! In disappointment .... All their supernatural powers didn't work, they were powerless! Golden stars pack was in stitches, laughing their eyes out at the sight of the most powerful witch powerless! Finally they revealed their secretes....and this is why Alex wasn't able to smell them...

"what have you done to us" Rick shouted in frustration.

"Oh I think I should have told you! In Golden stars territory you are ripped off all your supernatural powers and you can not perform magic. We have what we call "tigers" with their family around, you are nothing but Normal, defenseless human beings, you are weak. Only my pack have their abilities, its over for all of you." Simon explained before he turned to the gates of his house. Alex looked around in disbelief, it ended too soon! The "tigers" waved their hands to them and followed Simon. Tigers were different species, their power was to blocke all supernatural powers... To be 'unblocked' by their presence a ritual had to be done, you had to accept them as your family. They were lonely and lacked sense of belonging! Simon found them and accepted as family! Since then he lived a happy life.

Alex, Amanda, Onke and Jessy were thrown in a hole, petrol was poured all over them! Alex smiled and closed his eyes, thinking he would be with his mate on the other side. Rick sat down, feeling proud of him self thinking at least on his last day he fought a good fight, for a change he wasn't a perpetrator. Amanda sang her favourite song.... Angel's cry... She looked at her little brother and smiled. What is the best way of dying than dying with your loved ones. Jessy held Onke's hand and quizzed it. Then a man with a lighter showed up, he played with it... Turning it on and off! Onke who had been trying to keep it together let out a final loud cry, he let himself cry for all the pain he endured, all the worst he witnessed! He opened his heart and let it all out little did he know that his painful cry was what was going to save them! It was a ticket out of

that hole....

Mellisa James felt it! The she wolf felt the pain, the anger overwhelmed herv and sped the healing. she howled so loud, the ground was shaking and the grave opened! When she got out of the grave, completely healed! Only then she noticed why they feared her, the power she possessed was beyond measure! And they stepped in her toes. The devil she wolf was back from the dead

\*

[03/17, 08:25] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 48

It had been a while since I breathed...

It definitely felt like forever!

I AM BACK

\*

\*

\*

Six feet underground, zipped in a black bag! I thought I felt my soul leaving my body, I thought I felt the last breath leaving my lungs! I was dead, I don't know for how long but it surely felt like forever! I was betrayed! I spent quite sometime where the living referred to as the other side! It was so lonely, cold and frightening! It was dark, the loneliness was so real I could feel it. For the very first time since I turned, I was scared! I was scared, being lonely is excruciating. The pain caused by loneliness was agonizing more than being betrayed right after vows had been done but honestly, it was naive of me to think the truce crap was going to cut.

As I was lonely in the dark place I heard my brother cry, painfully! The scream he let out was from the bottom of his stomach and right at that moment I knew I had a place to go, he draw me back! I literally felt every part of me growing back! I felt myself healing in an incredible speed! I howled, the ground vibrated and the grave opened. When I got out of the grave I was completely healed, I stood there naked. I looked at myself in awe... Not even a scratch was left on my chocolate brown skin. This is what they feared! I was the strongest creature in all history! I looked around and recalled the place.... I was buried in Royal blood grave yard! How was that possible? How did Solomon sneak me here without being seen by those who claimed they'd protect me? I had all these pile of questions in mind but it wasn't the time to seek for answers. I could still feel my brother's pain and I could smell his fear. I tried to telepath Alex but it was like

he shut me off, I couldn't feel him, I couldn't Chanel his feelings.... It was like he didn't exist. I just couldn't feel him and that gave me heartache. I walked out of the grave yard- naked! I went to the Royal house, I took out the locker and got inside. I ran to Luna's bedroom and look for something wearable in this century... I wasn't surprised when I couldn't find any... I decided to take her round neck wool Jersey which was almost most like a dress to me, I wore her black Tommy's and sped out of the house before anyone could see me. I rolled the sleeves of the Jersey up to my elbows, it looked dope... Vintage kinda thing. It was nice to breath again.

I couldn't smell Rick, Alex, Jessy and Onke... The only lead I had was Onke's fear.... I think he was getting calm because after a few minutes it stopped and I had nothing to follow! While I was lost in the bush, frustrated, not knowing what to do... I felt a sharp pain piercing through my heart, it didn't belong to me, it wasn't mine, it was Onke's... I closed my eyes and let my soul take me away, my speed had tripled. In my head I had only one thought; to save my brother from what ever danger he was facing... When I opened my eyes, I was in a strange place. I had a lighter in my hand. I was standing in front of the man who the lighter belonged to.... I closed the lighter, my eyes fixed on his... The shock in his face was indescribable... I shrugged my shoulders and watched him running off.

For the first time I glanced down where he was throwing the lighter! I Was greeted by 10 big beautiful eyes.

"Mellisa James can never die." Rick told giving me his hand to help him out.

"my bitch just keeps slaying... Now she cheated death. Hahaha... Say what?" says Jessy after Rick had helped her out. We hugged.

When I looked at Alex, he was different. He didn't join the others and rejoice my return. My brother was in heaven, he couldn't believe it. But it wasn't the right time for hugs and kisses... I heard someone clapping hands coming from a distance, approaching us. I turned around, my crew behind me... Me as their armour! A mixed race man leading an army of what smelt like werewolf stood not far from us. He smiled, genuinely impressed. Besides him the was a very handsome boy which locked hands with Solomon's daughter.... On his otherside the was who I suspected to be a Luna, then there was a black family.... A mother, father and two children. They looked different, smelled different. They were not werewolves, they were a different specie.

The alpha slowly walked towards me.

"I wouldn't get closer if I were you." Migal warned him.

"dont worry, she is powerless around here. I just wanna touch her face." He said and reached for my cheek. I stood still.

"It's so soft. So you are really immortal. Its impressive. But you are powerless here, you are mortal. You just handed yourself for a good kill." he said cheerfully making the worst mistake of his life time, he traced my Jews... When his skin landed on mine I was able to read his mind. I found his weapon. I learned why he was so comfortable and cocky. The black family, they were

tigers, they blocked supernatural abilities.... By that definition in their presence I was supposed to be mortal. But this all begged the question why I found my self there, why I could smell them. Why I could read his mind. They had forgotten that I was the one who was not supposed to be born, their rules didn't apply to me. My supernatural powers were not blocked.

"i will enjoy seeing you suffer a slow death" he said before moving away from me. I smiled, not wanting to laugh really. When I howled underground I cause a mini earthquake. To be here I smelled my brother's fear. I was powerful beyond measure. Him touching me gave away his secret weapon, explaining why he was able to bring Rick down.

"How do you want to die?" Luna's soft voice chanted almost sounding like a beautiful melody.

"I was dead. I am thirsty"

I said sarcastically! Before they could blink twice I had all the Tigers hearts in my hand.

"and you where saying?" I said dropping down the last heart I had in my hand looking at Alpha's eyes, instead of attacking me, he jumped for my brother...

"why don't you attack other monsters like you? I am so back" Rick said before stopping his blood from moving. It was war! Alex was enjoying tearing them apart even more than Rick and Amanda did... Rick pushed Onke and Jessy to that hole they almost got burnt in... He then put binding spell so that no one could go in. The place got decorated in red, Alex didnt just kill! He made sure to leave his victim in pieces, he literally teared them from limb to limb and topped it up with taking off their heads. We killed them all without any mercy! Migal and his mate were the last ones. They begged for mercy, they surrendered their powers. I stood on top of them as they held each other on the corner.

"You killed me" I uttered.

Migal: Mellisa I know this isn't you, I know you feel betrayed. You are a queen, we are werewolves, one of your kind, please show us mercy. (She said kneeling on my feet) I am begging you Mellisa.

Me: Migal... Right? (She nodded) you are right... I am a Queen, and when a queen is betrayed she shows no mercy, mercy is for the weak... She teaches her people a lesson. (I then snatched my leg away from her hands, I walked to her mate and took his hand. I took all his powers. I could hear Migal shouting asking me to stop but i cared less. I took every ounce of power he had, I felt his pulse stopping. He died in my hands. Now I know why they thought I should be killed. Consuming power from another werewolf was climax... It was like a fucking orgasm and orgasm is addictive .... That's why we have so many sex addicts.

Migal had to die slowly in front of her father. On our way back to the Royal house they filled me

in, Migal ratted Alex's parents out. It made sense. Something was very off about Alex, I couldn't feel him.... The mate bond was more in my mind than in my heart. It was like the link had been broken. He strangely didn't show any affection towards me. But that was for a following day... I had to set things straight with my in laws first.

When we got to the Royal blood pack house where they were all trapped. I stood at the door and looked at them... They were all relieved to see me except of Alpha and Luna.

"Dearest dad and mom... Tell me how much did you miss me"

I said, with a wide smile in my face as I stepped in

[03/17, 08:27] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 49

When we got to the Royal blood pack house where they were all trapped. I stood at the door and looked at them... They were all relieved to see me except for Alpha and Luna.

"Dearest dad and mom... Tell me how much did you miss me"

I said, with a wide smile in my face as I stepped in side.

"Oh Moon Goddess, thank you, you are back. Where were you MJ? Can you believe your phyco friends and mate thought we killed you?" Olivia said, relieved to see me. I had my hands on my back, I just smiled and looked at her... I smiled a little, she rolled her eyes and came to hug me. "we almost died" she whispered. She quickly let go when I wasn't hugging her back.

"you can come in now." I shouted, my crew got in, Rick dragging Migal by her hair.

Me: Migal sweetheart, tell them what you told us.

Migal: what?

Me: don't make me ask twice. Tell them, you will be set free...

Solomon: Migal....

Me: (I cut him mid sentence) I don't recall telling you to speak Sir. (I said looking at Solomon, my hands still on my back, I looked at Migal and tilted my head on my right side... Sending shivers down her spine)

Migal: I, my dad, your Alpha and Luna finished the job, we killed Mellisa James and buried her in your grave yard.



(Silence pierced through the thin hair... They all looked at Alpha and Luna)

Alpha: what are you all looking at? Do you want to tell me you believe Migal? This is the same girl that said Mellisa was kidnapped by the Golden stars pack.

Onke: she lied, it was a trap, we almost got burned alive... Thank you though because if it wasn't for that stunt you pulled my sister would be still dead, and lonely on the otherwise.

Omega: wait, wait... Let me get this straight... We almost got killed because of you? Our leaders who supposed to protect us. You were going to let us die for your filthy deeds? How dare you!!

(He shouted in an animal voice... he was changing. The pack surrounded Alpha, Luna and Solomon... The three of them were in the hole Jessy made.)

Luna: boys, what do you think you are doing? We are your parents... This is what Migal wants, she wants you to turn against us. If her and her father killed Mellisa, I and your alpha had nothing to do with it... (She pleaded)

Tyler: ROYAL BLOOD PACK!!!

(He shouted, he was the 3rd in command. The pack listened to him)

Tyler: we don't know what's true and what's not. We shouldn't just jump into conclusions, yhea? One is innocent till proven guilty.... We go by our code.

Me: the 3rd in command, I woke up in your grave yard, Solomon wouldn't have buried me there without help from the inside.

Tyler: I'm sorry Mellisa.... We go by the code. You are one of our own, we vowed to protect you, if Alpha and Luna killed you; killed one of our own they will be punished according to the code.

Jessy: "if"? (She then looked at me) MJ is this guy serious?

Tyler: I am, these are our elders... They will be treated with respect.

Me: or I can just kill you all.

Tyler: well, you can but you won't... You are not who they think you are, you are a good person. I can see it in your eyes.

(I smiled sarcastically and got close to him. I sighed, slowly reached for his cheek and touched it. I then put my hand around his neck, his heartbeat was steady, he believed I was harmless, it was refreshing to know there are people other than my pack who still see me as a sweet harmless girl, still gazing at him, I dug my claws in his neck, he screamed painfully and knelt down before me... I didn't remove my claws in his neck.

I heard Olivia screaming coming towards me, asking what was wrong with me, Tyler is the only person who was always against killing me, he was the one who begged for me to be given a chance as a Royal blood pack Princess. When she was closer, Rick push her back with his mind. I bet he had been waiting to show off his powers.

After a few minutes I let go of Tyler. He was dizzy for a little while but he forced himself to get up. His eyes were filled with tears and anger. )

"I don't believe this, right after you promised to keep her safe." He said walking towards his pack.

Olivia: are you okay Tyler? What did you do Mellisa

Tyler: no, I'm not Okay Olivia.... I was in Mellisa's mind... I saw everything with my naked eyes, Migal and his father killed Mellisa... Alpha and Luna covered it up in promise of leading the Red moon pack... That's why after Mellisa disappeared they cared less about finding her but more about merging the packs... They knew what they have done, they knew we would never find her. All this time we were almost buried alive you knew it was all you....

Olivia: the most important question is; how long will it take them to kill one of us for power, again.

Omega: no, the most important question is; what are we going to do about it?

Tyler: like I have said; we go by the code.... Whoever kill one of their own is punishable by death.

Omega: Alex, they are your parents... You are the next Alpha.

Alex: what? I told you I am no longer your Prince.

(He looked like crap, he pushed back his curly hair and walked towards his parents, he jumped to the hole. )

Luna: baby..

Alex: Mommy

Luna: I'm sorry...

Alex: sorry for what mom?

(She shook her head and looked down)

Alex: you knew I wasn't going to survive the death of my mate...really who am I fooling, you once sent an army to kill me too...

Alpha: you, you turned off your humanity... I can see it in your eyes...

Alex: and that is your concern because.....? (He looked at his father)

"im sorry"

I heard Luna saying under her breath, she was about to kill her own and only Son; she was about to rip his heart out! But I was faster.... I ripped her heart out from behind right after she had her hand in Alex's chest. Alex had his eyes wide open when her mom dag her hand in his chest, but she slowly fell down before she could rip it out. When she fell, Alex looked at me, he held his chest stopping the bleeding... I had Luna's heart in my hand, he looked at me and looked in my hand then his mother's body... He sighed, I felt it... For the first time since I came back I felt him not only in my mind but in my heart too. "are you okay" I telepath him. He smiled and nodded, then ran out before tears could fall from his eyes. Alpha was screaming, holding his wife. The pack looked sad and I understood where they were coming from, a betrayal from a family member is painful, its hard to see your blood dead...

"im sorry, she was going to kill Alex, I wasn't going to let her." I said, looking at them with tears in my eyes.... They nodded.

Tyler: according to our code, they have to die, painfully.

Olivia: not by a silver knife..

Omega: but by fire.

I nodded. I looked at Solomon, he looked ferried. A thought crossed my mind. I reached for his hand and touched him. I took his powers. Every little bit of them. I could feel my she wolf growing. I felt his last breath leaving his lungs and I enjoyed it... His body desiccated! Black veins grew all over his dead body. I let out a satisfaction howl and got out of the hole, they all looked at me with their mouths and eyes wide opened. It felt like I just came. I could feel Alpha's eyes piercing through my back. I turned around and looked at him.

" what? Do you want to bless me before you die?"

Alpha: you took his power didn't you? This, this is what Naidoo meant. Tyler be careful, she is going to befriend you and kill you all.

(Tyler looked at him and shook her head. He pushed Migal to the hole. Matt poured petrol on them.Omega took out a box of matches from his pocket.)

Rick: that will not be necessary, please let me...

(He said with a smirk smile. He just concentrated at them and they were on fire! The pack all watched as they begged for their lives. I walked out to look for Alex. I telepath him asking where he was, he didn't get back to me. But I could smell him. He was in his parent's bedroom. I knocked lightly on the door. He didn't reply so i let myself in. I closed the door and walked to the bed. I sat next to him, he looked at me, I felt a sharp pain piercing through my chest...it was his, I

didn't know what to say, I channelled his pain. He slowly reached for my hand.

"I, I blocked my emotions. I couldn't handle the pain of losing you." He said.

Me: the bond as broken but I loved you still.

Alex: I didn't want to feel anything...

Me: but the death of your parents broke the wall, I am deeply sorry.

Alex: I loved them but they betrayed me, when they killed you they killed me and showed no remorse. Then I lost myself, I killed without remorse. I am a horrible person...

Me: you were died, you had no emotions, you are the most honourable person I have ever met. You loved and forgave your parents even after they wanted to chop off your head. You came back for them, you came back to fight their battles.. If you were not a good person you wouldn't have came back. You are a dream. Without you I would be lost, I would be the monster they fear, I learn what is wrong or right from your eyes. You are my remedy.

(He closed his eyes and open them again. Our eyes locked, he cupped my face and studied all my facial features one by one, carefully. My body was electrified. He pulled my face closer for a kiss. I closed my eyes and listened to the reaction of my body as our lips locked. He lowered his hands to my waist then he rolled me underneath him, he got on top of me, looked at me before another kiss... This time it was slow and passionate. His hands were under my jersey, as he made his way to my ass I remembered that I wasn't wearing any panties... When he learned this, he giggled and took the jersey off. I helped undressing him, he parted my legs with his knees and kissed my neck, his right hand playing with my nipples.. I could feel his thing against mine, he was rocking back and forth slowly, he kissed my neck and went for my ear! My knee weakened right there are then, I swear his breath on my ear almost made me cum, I opened my legs wide for him but he kept tantalising me... So like a true alpha woman, I took matters on my hand, I put it in my self. Our right hands locked, he gently had his left hand around the top of my head... He thrust in and filled me up, I gasped for air, our eyes locked, I saw love all over his eyes, without shifting his eyes from mine he rocked back and forth slowly... We rocked at the same rhythm. He let go of my hand and held my thigh up, he fucked me side ways, I could feel it in all corners, his eyes closed I let out a soft moan! Gosh... He picked up the pace and started pounding faster and harder... I couldn't help but moan a little louder and told him to fuck me... Harder... Like I'm his Queen, my wishes were his command... He turned me around and hit it from behind. I called moon Goddess, wanting to deliver an appreciation speech but I had lost all sense of reasoning, I didnt know where to begin, I didn't know any languages. He held my hips and put it all in... He then pulled out, he pulled me to the edge of the bed, he put my thighs together and thrust in while they were closed! I felt it from my pussy lips and all the way down in side, he slowly rocked back and forth. I closed my eyes and also rocked back and forth following his pace. He opened my legs and rocked harder and harder, I dont know how many times I came. He kept rocking back and forth, harder and harder till he roar like a lion. After he

came he crawled to the bed and layed next to me. I got closer, when I was to rest my head on his chest, the door flipped open, I quickly pulled a blanket over me.... When the person showed up I wanted to rip my own heart out. It was Rick, the goofy smile in his face. He stood by the door and clapped his hands...

Rick: you dirty little cunts... Shagging on your parent's bed right after they buried you.... How poetic... Regarding that its you who is literally rocking back and forth in the world of the living. You just gotta love the irony ....

\*

\*

\*

\*

[03/17, 08:27] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 50

Rick: you dirty little cunts... Shagging on your parent's bed right after they buried you.... How poetic... Regarding that its you who is literally rocking back and forth in the world of the living. You just gotta love the irony ....

(He said with the naughtiest smile on his face.... Alex and I literally ran out of words. "Okay get dressed we need to talk ASAP." He continued then he turned around and walked away. Alex and I looked at each other and laughed.

Alex: babe, remind me again where did you meet this guy??

Me: hahaha he wanted to sacrifice me for a ritual..... He is insane.

Alex: indeed... I mean who does that and not apologise?!

Me: lol that man has no morals...

(We got dressed, Alex tied my shoe laces. He Kept glancing at me while at it. Lol the spark sex gives to a relationship is amazing .... Once you shake your booty your man bows down, lol that's if he doesn't leave.... We went out of the bedroom, when we got to the lounge we were greeted by naught smiles like we had our private parts ngaphandle.

Rick: oh there they are, don't worry I brought them up to speed. I told them you were busy with "mate" stuff and you wished not to be disturbed. First time has to be special.

(He laughed, when he noticed others were not laughing. They were just dying to he tried to contain himself.)

Rick: come on guys....

(Alex and I just kept a straight face. I remembered I had news toys to play with, I could move objects with my mind. I smiled to myself. While he was busy telling our crew that its not a crime to laugh at joke about new Alpha and Luna, I mean people make fun of Nelson Mandela and people laugh at those jokes! I unbuckled his belt, when he noticed something was moving beneath his belly bottom I was already done with the belt and unzipping was the easy part, his pants was already in his ankles. They all laughed. I shrugged my shoulders and sat down.)

Rick: really? Really Mellisa you just had to, didn't you?

(He said with his pants in his ankles and boxers on)

Jessy: hahahaja please hide that, you are too skinny and pale bra...

Rick: oh now I see, y'all hate me.... When jokes are on me everyone laughs till their stomach hurts. And Jessy I am not going to wear them pants your Luna wanted to see... She will tell me when she had seen enough.

Onke: hahaha look who is whining like a little bitch. It was never a secret that we don't like you....

Jessy: ncooo you look so cute when you are pouting.

(We all laughed, he got dressed and sat down)

Onke: you know I am joking right? I think by now we all have learnt to love you.

Rick: learnt?

Onke: yhea, we literally had to attend sessions like..... "how to live with the heartless and sarcastic powerful witch" hahaha

Jessy: hahaha thats classic.

(They high fived )

Rick: you guys are sleeping together, aren't you? It looks like my sister and I are the only ones not getting some.

Amanda: hahaha dude I was just thinking about that, I have to have some werewolf bang.... And

Omega looks hot. (She rolled her eyes and crossed her legs)

Me: lol and when he finds his mate??

Amanda: sweetheart I'm looking for a shag not marriage. I would be dumb to fall in love with a blood werewolf, tthe mate bond shit almost got my brother crazy....

(Then there was awkward silence.)

Me: Rick, what was so important? (I said trying to break the silence)

Rick: umm, this other guy wanted to talk to you... I don't know his name but the one you had claws on his neck...

Alex: Tyler... What did he want...

Rick: he didn't say... A way forward I guess, you are their leaders now.

Alex: its getting late, we should go to them ...

(The six of us went to the pack house. It was a mess, Tyler and the pack were trying to save what was left of it. They had Luna's body in a black bag and Alpha's ashes in an urn)

Tyler: guys they are here....

(He shouted, they all stopped what they were doing)

Tyler: we have to bury our parents before midnight, according to our code traitors can not be buried in our land, their bodies should be burnt and thrown in the river. By our definition, our parents were traitors, they don't deserve to be with our ancestors, they chose power over family. Alex , Mellisa.... We need new leaders and it's your birth right to lead this Royal blood pack. You are now Alpha and Luna....

(They all bowed their hands.)

Me: thank you Tyler... But I'm sorry, I, I can't do it.... I can not stay here, you accepted me and I will forever be grateful, you are family, my family And I can not put you in danger. You have been through enough for me.... As long as I am alive these attacks will keep coming, they will get worse and worse and you will lose more pack members than you already have- in my name.... I want to keep you safe and the only way to keep you safe is to leave you alone, is to give your enemies no reasons to come after you. If I stay all evil will come to you, you will not meet your mates because all packs will be your enemies.... I know some of you are thinking this.... If I hadn't showed up your lost pack members and leaders would still be alive... For that I am deeply sorry.. I can't change the past but I can influence the future... I want you to live in peace like you did in the past. I will leave you safe.... Rick and Amanda will seal your territory... No werewolf who is not in your pack, no human being nor hunters will pass the gates without being invited

in... Its the little I can do....

About Luna and Alpha... They loved you, they died trying to protect you from the she wolf devil. Lately i have come to terms with the fact that They were not entirely wrong, I shouldn't be around Werewolves, consuming your power is intoxicating. I can control minds and I will always be tempted to control everything around you. I will be tempted to take over your lives and steal your powers when you are no longer useful to me. This power I have is overwhelming so before it consume me I want to be far away from you, from my family... I want to protect you from me. Luna and Alpha were no traitors, they were protecting their family. So while I still have control over myself I'm going to live... I want you to be safe....

(I said the last words with a fading smile, warm tear escaped from my eye. )

Omega: but Mellisa that's what family is supposed to do, protect each other. This is not right....what do y'all think we are going to do?

Alex: our elders are still alive, you have your leader, your new Alpha... Tyler... He is the most reliable person and I can not trust any one with my family more that I trust him. You will be safe with him than you'll ever be with me- with us. Mellisa is right, we can not be your leaders, we have already put you in danger enough .. This is the only way...

Olivia: no, no this is not right Prince. No, no man... While you think about taking care of us who is going to take care of you? Huh? Why can't Rick do his witch Juju which will protect all of us from whats coming?

Omega: it sounds like you are running away from your responsibilities. If dying for you is our fate... Don't deny it for us.... Moon Goddess doesn't not smoke dagga

Tyler: Alex and Mellisa you are not going anywhere. Besides people already know we are your family, they will come to us to get to you.... Last time that happened we lost almost half of our pack..... Its your choice to be here when your enemies come or to come and save the day when almost all of us are dead.

(Alex and I looked at each other. He nodded)

Me: one more thing.... This is my pack... Two witches, earthquake maker and a human. Do you understand that if we stay, they stay... Last time I checked witches were not allowed here.

Tyler: who can say no to a powerful weapon? Laws are amended erry day...

Rick: hahaha so I am a powerful weapon. I like that....

(We gave in and stayed at the Royal blood home. Before midnight we forbid our parents farewell, they were buried with the rest of the ancestors. On the following day our elders threw a



big party to announce me and Alex as new Alpha and Luna. In this event packs used to invite other packs but because of the nature of their Luna, the person they chose to lead them they had to separate themselves from other werewolves. Rick and Amanda used my blood and Alex's blood and every ones blood who is in our pack to protect the territory... No one could get in without being invited in, by me or Alex.

It was a new beginning )

:

[03/17, 08:28] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 51 ...

Luna!!

That was my new name... That was my new label, for some reasons humans always find a need to label each other and due to these labels one will appear more powerful and "important" than the other. Like my new name, my new identity – Luna, it carried power, it had authority. Luna was a pure alpha who left her pack to get married to her mate... After tears and blood shed I was crowned as Luna of the Royal Blood wolf pack, by that – it meant Alex and I were officially married.

"I know, I know.... Believe me I know.

About 8 months ago I didn't know who I am, I didn't know about my 'animal' side – so is it labelled... I didn't know I was a werewolf- heck I didn't even believe such things existed. Then one stupid day, I was attacked, I took a human's life.... I triggered the 'curse' without even knowing it. I remember breaking every bone in my body, I remember my eyes turning red – i was terrified and I remember killing a man and enjoying the smell of the blood. That night changed me, it changed everything but I wouldn't change anything- destiny isn't easy to run from. From that night I became the most wanted, I hadn't done anything but every supernatural specie wanted a piece of me. I was on the run ever since I turned. The meaning of family was redefined. Family isn't blood but people who are the to pick you up when you are down. My brother- Onke isn't family because he is James but because he has always been there... So are my very weird friends... The ones I have grown fond of... The ones who started by wanting to kill me but we have found a common ground. Rick, Amanda and Jessy- they are my family – my pack.

When I learned about you, about a mate bond I thought it was my shot to have a place called home but that chance was taken away from me before I even have a taste of it. You hunted me

down like I was an enemy. So;

I know, I know..... Believe me I know, you and I started on a very wrong foot. But the chance of being family was taken away it wasn't lost.... We can still be what we were supposed to be from the beginning – the most powerful pack that this world has ever seen. But only in one condition- we have had these talks far enough, and enough is enough – no more betraying. No more long speeches trying to convince you I am not the enemy. You asked me to stay, I stayed because I believe in second chances, I stayed because moon Goddess isn't a fool, She knew what she was doing when She made me your Prince's mate. She knew one day I will have to lead this pack- not just a pack but a Royal blood pack and I am not one to run away from my responsibilities. I will kill everyone who wants to cause you harm, just like I will kill any of you who tries to betray me...

My name is Mellisa James, the most wanted, she who wasn't supposed to be born, I am far from perfect but my intentions are always good, my heart still bleeds.... This day marks the day I become Luna of Royal Blood pack, the day I become Mellisa McSmith. I am your leader”

I finished the long exhausting speech and drank the drink that I was supposed to drink when I accept the Luna duty. I was tired, it felt like I was having a dejavu... I had a speech like this when I was being accepted as their Princess, right after the vows were made their leaders went ahead and cut my head off. I knew the rest of the pack had nothing to do with my death but I couldn't trust any one except my pack- my old pack. They had to earn my trust. I looked them in their eyes as I was speaking, I might not have been able to read their minds but I could see it in their eyes, more than anything they were scared. They have seen me draining Solomon dry, they heard me confessing my insecurities, they knew what Naidoo foresaw might come to life and they would have no one to blame but themselves. They were told I was a monster but they chose to 'trust me' ... I saw fear, it hit me and I made a promise to myself- I'd never hurt them. I will protect them with my life.

The ceremony took the whole day. The elders gave us speeches on what it means to be an Alpha and Luna... Above everything it means to put your pack above everything ... Above yourself and/or your blood family. After the ceremony, we had fun Gamez... Something like a bond session. As the time went by I could see relief in their eyes, they started to believe that I was good, I wasn't what the world thought I was. It was a fun evening, I learned that I literally couldn't get drunk cause I healed too quickly.... They made me drink 3 bottles of vodka, trust me the taste was awful but I couldn't run away from the challenge.... “you cheated death, don't tell me you can't handle a vodka! Come on now!” Said Tyler pouring petrol to the fire... They all chanted ... “drink it, drink it” even after I drank it I was still as sober as fuvk, instead I ran to the bathroom and threw up. My stomach was empty, I sat on the toilet seat and buried my head in my hands, elbows digging on my thighs. I felt a little dizzy... I was startled by someone asking if I was okay, I looked up, it was Olivia. “yhea, yhea... I'm okay, I just need to lay down. Y'all got me good.” I said trying to get up, but I was off balance, I almost fell on my face.... “hey hey, haha you can get drunk after all” Olivia said helping me, with excitement. She put my arm around her neck and walked me to the Royal house. I dozed off as soon as I got to my bed.

I woke up in the morning with a massive headache and unbelievable tired. Alex was next to me, I didn't even hear him coming in. I was still in my clothes, I suspected Alex came late and he was drunk. I slowly woke up and covered him in a blanket. I then went to the bathroom to pee and brush my teeth. My pack... Original pack was staying in a Royal house while the royal blood pack members had houses around the land.

I went to the kitchen, thirsty as they come. I took a bottle of spring water and went to the lounge, I was startled when I found Jessy and Onke there. Onke was sleeping on Jessy's lap... He looked darker... More like Navy.

"OJ what's up? You look dead" I said jokingly.

Jessy: he is dying... He is burning up bro...

Me: hahaha look who can't handle a hang over. Look, you guys can't heal like me so nje you shouldn't have drank like me. (I threw myself on the couch.)

Jessy: this, this isn't a hang over MJ... Onke is dying...

Me: I shit feel hot and dizzy mna self... I will never drink booze ever again... I don't know why the fuck I'm not healing. What's the time Jes?

Jessy: I don't fucken know... Look at this Mellisa... Oh my God... Oh my God... Look at this.

(She shouted, panicking. Alright, hold up a damn minute , this was serious. I got up and went to them... My eyes were all out when I paid close attention. I tried not to panic, I tried to calm down, I tried to keep it together but I couldn't my brother was dying right in front of me and I couldn't even see it. He had black thick visible veins on his back. That's not how hang over look like, hang over supposed to be in the mind and shit, not something like this.

"Onke, OJ."

I called out his name, he just gave me a fainting smile.

"whats wrong?"

Alex asked, entering after Rick and Amanda following.

Jessy: I don't know, something is wrong with Onke, he woke up like this... At First he said he was tired and dizzy and these veins started showing up.

Amanda: oh my Good... This looks like food poison, Mellisa's blood can cure him right... ?

(She put a back of her hand on Onke's forehead. )

Me: (nodding) yhea, yhea tota....

( I couldn't finish the sentence I started coughing... 'are you okay' Alex said and gave me water. I drank the water and told them I was fine. I bit my wrist to feed Onke my blood... I mean there was nothing a drop of my blood couldn't heal. "WHAT THE FUDGE?!!" I screamed, terrified . My blood was black... No, not an expression, it was literally black. I stood up in totally shock.... )

Alex: wait, wait .. What's that on your back MJ.

(He pulled me closer and unzipped my dress before I could utter a word. .... They all looked at each other. Their eyes looking like they were facing death.)

Me: what... Tell me ...(I said, coughing)

Alex: I don't know but what's happening to Onke is also happening to you.

Me: what do you mean what's happening to Onke is also happening to me? (I asked, confused)

Amanda: you have the exact tree of veins in your back.

Rick: don't you feel dizzy and tired like he did?

Me: umm I did... I do actually... (I got more confused by a second. What the hell was happening. Why was my blood black.)

Jessy: is it food poison? Do something people ... Stop staring like you are scientists doing a study on human subjects.

Rick: no, no its not a food poison.

Alex: then what is it?

Rick: (he felt Onke's pulse and felt mine) you are linked.

Me: what do you mean we are linked?

Rick: wow, this is fucking impressive. I can't wait to see the genius behind this, I will surely shake their hands before I tear them apart.

Alex: Rick, now, please.

Rick: OK, OK... They linked Mellisa to Onke... Onke and Mellisa are siblings, they share the same blood but Mellisa is immortal and heals... But if she is linked to Onke she is mortal, whatever happens to Onke will happen to her but a little slower since she is a she wolf..... This is an ancient spell, they must have linked you a long time ago and the curse is maturing now. Its fast, by the look of things Onke has about 12 hours, so is MJ... If your brother dies, you die with him... You will stay dead until the curse is broken. But when its broken after you are both dead I guess you will cheat death again, you will heal but Onke doesn't have those abilities.

Jessy: OK Rick we get it and we are freaked out already. How do you reverse or break the curse.

Rick: we have to find the witch who did it.

Alex; Mj, you are shaking, sit down. (He gentle put me on the couch)

Jessy: do you still have your powers? You can get in Onke's head and find out what happened.

(I touched Amanda who was next to me and nothing happened. I couldn't read her mind or anything. I tried to move a glass that was on the coffee table with my head but dololo, it didn't move at all. I shook my head, I was burning. The black thick veins were moving to my arms. And I knew exactly who was behind this. Really, it wouldn't be my life without supernatural drama going on. Without something out of the ordinary happening I would be bored. I was used to this, but this time they went too far. I will kill everyone who tries to harm my beloved brother. I tear them from limb to limb and show them no mercy. Seeing him like this was killing me more than the poison that was spreading all over my body. I slowly walked to his couch and sat next to him. And held his hand. This would be a perfect way of dying but it was too soon, I wasn't ready.

I sighed and looked at my evil anchor ... And smiled a bit... With my eyes slowly shutting... When it came to getting hands dirty... there was no one I trusted more than Rick...

I commanded him;

"BRING ME HIS HEART, LUNGS AND HIS TWO BALLS"

He replied with his famous murderous evil smile. And murmured;

"YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND LUNA, ALWAYS AND FOREVER"

Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 52

"BRING ME HIS HEART, LUNGS AND HIS TWO BALLS" I said.

He replied with his famous murderous evil smile.

"YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND LUNA, ALWAYS AND FOREVER"

The poison was spreading too fast. My brother was already covered in black thick veins even on his face, they were starting to show on my neck. I could see the terror in Alex's eyes, the anger in Rick's, the heartbreak in Amanda's and the fear in Jessy's ... Jessy was the most terrified and frustrated.

Rick took out a map from his bag and took a drop of Onke's blood to do a locating spell. I could

see his hands shaking...

"who are we trying to find?" Amanda asked biting her nails.

Rick: their brother...

Amanda: damn it... He is the one who did this...

(Rick didn't reply instead he screamed and threw the paper away, he held his head, pacing up and down)

"he is clocked, I can't find him any where! I should have killed him a long time ago." He said with a tear escaping his right side eye.

"oh my God. What's going on" Tyler said upon getting in the room and laid his eyes on me and my brother. We all looked at him and kept quiet.

Tyler: tell me what the fuck is going on?

Alex: Luna and her brother are dying. That's what is going on....

Jessy: before you ask anymore questions- they are linked... They cursed Onke, so whatever happens to Onke happens to MJ too... Onke is mortal, if he dies, Mellisa dies to...

Onke: more like WHEN...

Jessy: don't say that Onke, we will find a way. We always do.

Tyler: I'm going to tell the pack. My mom might know what to do.

Rick: this is witch business. The only way to end the spell is to find the witch who casted it, to find the witch we have to find Kwanda... To find kwanda we have to do a fucking locating spell! Must I tell you that he is no where to be found. (He punched the wall. Terrified, Tyler ran out and came back with the whole pack. His mother- Grace who was also an advisor came close to me and checked the veins.)

Rick: damn I hate being so useless.

Tyler: mma have you seen something like this?

Grace: back in the 70's when we had witches running all the land, this is how they killed an entire bloodline. They linked them together and killed them at the very same time.

Olivia: surely you found a way,how did you stop it.

Grace: we killed all of them. The only way to break the curse is to kill the witch who did it.

Jessy: that's not bloody helpful. We don't know where Kwanda is... They are running out of time. Look at Onke. He doesn't deserve to die like this. This isn't fair. (She said between sobs)

Omega: isn't Mellisa immortal, to the literally meaning of the word?

Amanda: she is, your point is?

Omega: maybe this is affecting her because she is in human form, maybe she has to turn. Her she wolf is stronger than anything I've ever seen.

John (Grace's husband): you are right Omega... Mellisa isn't just a wolf, she is something else... If she turns the spell will stop affecting her. Luna, you have to turn.

Me: wait- it will not break but it will stop affecting me? What about my brother? What happens when I turn to a human form again?

John: when you turn to your human form you'll be completely healed. Turn Mellisa..

Me: WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO MY BROTHER?( I shouted)

Grace: we are sorry, your brother can't be saved.

Me: I choose to die with my brother. I'm not going to choose myself over us. (I said shaking my head)

Onke: its okay MJ. Its okay sister Bae. I'm ready.

Me: no, I'm not going to do it OJ. I chose you, if you die, I die. I'm not going to cheat death if we can't cheat together. Its you and I or nothing. Living without you would be meaningless anyway. Don't worry, I'm here, I'm going to die with you. (I looked at Rick) don't kill my big brother, cause him a slow excruciating pain that will make him regret being alive. An agonizing pain that will last him forever with my name and Onke's name tattooed on his forehead. (I looked at Alex and the pack) its okay guys. Stop crying, its okay. No one is supposed to leave forever anyway.

Olivia: but no one is supposed to die like this. Mellisa please turn.

Me: (shaking my head) I can't.

(I was coughing, the veins were all over. My brother 's body was shutting off. I felt his wrist, the was no pulse. I didn't scream,I couldn't. I knew I had less than 5 mins to follow suit. I closed his eyes, tears running down my cheeks. )

Rick: Mellisa James we are not going to lose the both of you at the bloody same time. That's fucking selfish, turn now or I am going to make you. I swear to God I'm going to make you turn (He shouted, point at me with a mean finger. I kept quiet, praying to moon goddess to take me now. But because I was immortal and I was healing the curse was affecting me slower than it was affecting Onke. I felt my hand break, I looked up at Rick, he was concentrating on me. He was turning me.)

Me: don't do this Rick. My brother is dead, don't you get it? I can't live with that, I'm better off dead too. If you make me turn I'm going to hate you with everything I have.

Rick: yhea I'd rather have that, I'd rather have you hating my behind that to see you dead.

(To be continued)

[03/17, 12:33] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 53

"Aaaaaaa I am going to kill you. I swear I am going to kill you all"

I screamed after begging the pack, Jessy, Amanda and Alex to please stop Rick from turning me against my will. They all stood there and watched, some closed their eyes as some wide open their eyes and witnessed me breaking everything bone in my body. I was breaking because I was under a spell, I was turning against my will. They watched as my claws and fangs grew! My wolf form was tall and pure white. I completely turned. I couldn't feel the heat and dizziness. I stood next to my brother's body. I looked at him and sniffed his body. My tail was waving in the air, I was about to explode. I turned around and looked at them, they look took a few steps back from me. Once my bright red shot eyes met Rick's blue eyes, I felt cold shivers all over my body, I howled so loud and tried to jump at him but he tied all my muscles with his mind. I couldn't move towards him- them! I looked at him and thought of all the pain I was going to cause him. Then I remembered that to beat Rick one had to be strategic. But I was too angry to be plotting his death.

"I'm going to let you free MJ but you have to promise.... Promise to behave, okay?" Rick said with his hands in the air as he slowly knelt down to match my wolf height. I grinned!

He nodded his head. I dag my palm on the floor. Expressing uncontainable anger!

"ok, OK this is so not going to work. Use your mate bond buddy." Rick said looking at Alex. Alex looked hesitant.

"Don't worry she won't bite. She can't move there unless I let her free." Rick told.

Alex: I'm not scared.

He tried to come closer to me but I was mad at him too for not stopping Rick. I howled, louder than ever. I stood with my back two feet and howled.



"S T O O O P" Alex shouted in his animal voice, after a very long time I felt his intoxicating mint scent. I calmed down almost immediately! When I looked at him he was in his shiny black wolf form. He just stood in front of me and looked at me, not with anger but with sympathy. Our nose almost touched. We telepath.

"Look around MJ"

I shifted my eyes from his.... When I looked around our pack was on the floor, bleeding through their ears and eyes.

"Did I do this?" i asked.

Alex: yes, when you howled they all fell down and started bleeding.

Me: wow I'm getting more impressed with my beast self.

Alex: I am sorry Mellisa.

Me: for not respecting my will? I will kill you too along with every one here. I will kill all of you, do you hear me Alex! Fuck the mate bond, It should be me who is dead not my brother. He is dead, do you understand that? Onke James, my OJ is dead, they wanted to kill me not him. Why do I get to survive ? Why do I get to live while its me who shouldn't have been born, its me they wanted to kill! Its me who have sinned, its me who is a monster. Why do I get to cheat death in expense of my own brother? Why do I get to live? You should have let me die....

(I was too broken, Alex channelled my pain but it kept coming back. It was more than I could bear, all I wanted was blood in my hands and if I stayed there any longer I was really going to kill them all, I told Rick to free me or their blood was going to be in his hands. I told him I needed to leave for a while. He freed me and I disappeared to the woods in a blink of an eye. I ran out the of the supernatural world to the world of normal beings. I found my self in front of a police station . My palms were sore. I sat down, looked around and noticed no one was around. I turned to my human form. I hugged myself and let out a painful cry. My mind refused to register that Onke was no more, it couldn't be true, not even a bit. I cried for many things- I cried for my brother dying so young for absolutely nothing, I cry for my older brother who I am going to cut into pieces and let him bleed to death, I cried for Jessy having to witness her boyfriend dying, I cry for every soul who was involved in my brother's death, who I am going to kill with no mercy! I was going to kill and enjoy the smell of their blood. I was going to hold their heart in my hands witness their warm blood dripping down my arms and come at the sight of them begging of their lives. I cried for so many things. Lastly I cry for my self, the gold hearted Mellisa James who they stabbed to death. She took her last breath when Onke took his! Now she is who they always anticipated her to be – the monster – she who will end the nation – she who wasn't supposed to be born.

I let the last tear wet my thigh. I then dry my eyes with the back of my hand. And stood up. Naked- I walked to the police station. When I was at the door the securities and receptionist

almost fainted. I just stood there, in front of them, completely naked. With my hands on my sides, not covering anything.

“Are, are you alright?”

An old Afrikaner police asked, confused. He took off his police jacket and wrapped it around my shoulders. He shouted to younger police guys to stop starring, then he led me by my hand to his office. I sat on the chair, he sat on the table.

“what is your name? What are you doing here naked? Are you hurt?” he asked, concerned . I shook my head.

“then what are you doing here? Why are you naked? What is your name? What can we do for you?”

Me: my name is Mellisa James. I am a werewolf, but recently I think its safe to say I am a hybrid of werewolf and witch. I mean I can move objects with my mind and certain spells don't work on me. I'm sure you are confused right now let me break it down for you; I was born with werewolf genes, the curse was activated when I killed someone, after that I lived on the run. Along the way I met a witch and fell pregnant with his child. I then lost the baby. It was cursed by my werewolf hunter brother. When I turned my family hunted me down like a wild animal, I had two brothers. The oldest felt I need not to live and the other one didn't see the monster in me. He ran away with me, left everything behind to 'protect' his lil sister. He called me sister Bae (I looked at him and smile) Gosh, I used to hate that. He was the only thing that made sense in my new world. My source of strength. My oldest brother is so determined to kill me, so, he found a witch to link me with my brother. My brother died few hours ago. I cheated death, for the second time. I survived even though it was against my will. Right now I am angry beyond any poet has ever tried to explain in depth the meaning of the word. Without this anger, I am empty. I dont know if I have answered your questions correctly. Did i?

(confusion was written all over his face. I then showed my claws, drew a heart on the table with my claws. His eyes popped out, I roared softly, I swear he almost peeped in his pants. He stood up, lost balance. I held his arm and pulled him up. The jacket that was around my shoulders fell on the floor. I'm sure to him everything felt like a dream. Still holding his arm. I patted him on the shoulder and let go of his arm. I folded my arms and tilted my head on the left. Then, I took a deep sigh... My eyes glowing- red. Like a Luna of a Royal house.)

Me: oh boy. It feels good to just talk to a stranger. I feel like a heavy burden has been lifted off my shoulders. But you know you are not supposed to know that. ( I sighed again) what should I

do with you? I am tempted to compel you to forget buuuut on the other side I need to send a message to my brother- the hunter. I have to let him know that I am alive and kicking. And I am coming for him. You are going to help me send that message. I'm glad I don't see a ring in your finger. No one is going to miss you.

(That was the day they last saw the sun. I killed all the police that were in that police station. I left only one police who looked really young, almost my age. Between 20-22. I left him to tell the tale. The she wolf was there.

"The she wolf was here, she who was not supposed to be born." I told him to say that when he was asked what happened.

\*

[03/17, 12:34] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 54

When I walked out of the police station it was already dark. I walked out like a God, blood dripping down from my claws. And I didn't feel any kind of remorse. The message was sent. All I had to do was to wait.

I went to wash off the blood in the public tap. Then I went to the nearest empty building. Alex kept telepathing me even after I have told him many times to leave me the fuck alone.

"please come home Luna. Onke's body will decompose. We have to discuss a way forward, please. I'm begging you. I promise no one will breathe down your neck. I promise mate. come home. I just wanna hold you. I want to make you feel better. Let me do my job MJ. I am in your life for a reason. There's a mate bond for a reason. Come home my love. Let me be there for you. Do not deny me the right to be there for you, for my wife, for my soul mate. Please come home." He said. A last tear fell down along time ago. I was not going to cry again. I told him I was coming. He was right. I had to be there for my brother. A message was sent, but only tomorrow was it going to be received by the right people.

My human form was stronger and faster. I learned a new trick where I just imagined where I wanted to go and it took me minutes.... I pushed every muscle in me and I be where I wanted in a very short period of time. No, it was not teleporting, I can't explain it... Let me call it super speed.

In a snap of a finger I was at the gates of Royal blood pack. It was dark. They had all the lights

off. There was a globe at the gate. I put my hand on it and it was turned on, so were all other lights in Royal Blood land. I smiled to myself, it was beautiful. I went to the line where we kept clothes for everyone who felt like ripping their clothes off and turn into a wolf. I took a light summer dress and put it on. I was walking bear feet. I walked to the Royal house, I opened the door without knocking. When I entered they all stood up. I raised my eye brows in a questioning manner! It got weirder as they decided to bow down their heads. "awkward" I murmured under my breath, they all looked at me like I was a moron. Crap! I had totally forgotten that they have werewolf hearing skills! I rolled my eyes and smiled.

Then I noticed that my brother was on the couch. Just the way I left him.

Tyler: we were waiting for you to give us direction.

(I ignored him and went to sit next to my brother. I put his head on my lap. I felt a pulse in his wrist and in his neck... There was none. I know I said I was done crying but I found my self sniffing, tears threatening my eyes.

"Oh Onke. I'm sorry Buddy. I'm so sorry." This time tears were rolling down my cheeks. More than anything I wished I could wake him up and tell him how sorry I was, for everything. For letting him help me escape when my parents tied me up. For letting him go with me. I should have known this was going to happen. I should have known. Onke was human, he didn't stand a chance in a supernatural world, only death was facing him. I kept brushing his cheek, rocking myself back and forth. "I'm so sorry OJ but I promise this; your death will not be in vein. I will avenge you. I will kill them all." I stood up and kissed his forehead. I looked at the rest of the pack.

"Thank you, thank you all for being here. I'm going to be alright. We are going to bury Onke in the morning. You can go to sleep. Thank you so much."

We all hugged and they all went to their homes. Rick and I didn't hug, we just starred at each other and I knew exactly what was written in his eyes...he wanted war! The killing spree he had been longing for. I just nodded my head. He did the same. I held Alex's hand and went to our bedroom. No, not his parent's bedroom. Alex's bedroom.

I took off my dress and joined him to the shower. I was angry, hurt and horny. He first refused for me to touch him there. I looked at him and pushed my locks back then I went on my knees. No man can say no to a good head. He lifted me up and pinned me against the wall. All this time our eyes were locked. Our eyes turned red, I dug my claws on his back. As he went in harder and harder, we both lost control and howled at the same time.

"GUYS... Piss off" Jessy shouted. We laughed, only then we noticed that the wall cracked. We got out of the shower and went to bed. He held me in his arms and channelled every worry I had. When I fell asleep, my heart was at ease. I woke up in the morning, Alex wasn't there. I asked

him where he is, he told me he was helping the guys in the grave yard. I wore the same dress and tommy's and got out. Jessy was resting on Amanda's lap in the lounge, Amanda was playing with her hair.

We exchanged greetings. There were noise out side. And many different smells.

"What's going on out side?" I asked.

Amanda: they are preparing for the funeral.

"oh" was the only word I could utter. I asked them to come with me out side. We went to the ladies who were collecting woods, preparing fire outside.

"Where did I put the box of matches" said Grace looking around.

"dont worry mama." I held her hand to stop her from looking around. I then looked at Amanda. At first she didn't get me, I shrugged my shoulders and looked at the woods. She smiled and lifted the corner of her lips.

"Oh baby, it will be my pleasure." She said and waved her hand. Then there was fire, a big one. We all laughed and clapped our hands.

Grace: times are changing. I never thought I would see the day where my people would be sharing laughter with witches.

Amanda: blame it to this She wolf. (She pointed at me)

Olivia: now we aren't only hanging out with witches but with earthquake makers too. Who would have known. Wow.

Me: lol, did you know earthquake makers exist?

Grace: I heard about them in the later 60's but we never came across them. They were a very limited specie. All ran in one blood line.

Jessy: you hear that? I'm a limited edition. (she pushed me)

Me: (I giggled) so am I ...

(She then pulled me, held my hand and led me to the garden, not far to the grave yard. Amanda was on Jessy's left side. We walked very slowly, and sat on the green lawn.)

Jessy: I can't believe that Onke is really gone. (She let out a painful smile, starring at the flower in her hand)

Me: me too.

Amanda: I didn't really know him but he had a really cute smile, I liked how his eyes closed when he laughed so I guess he is worth crying for even by me.

(Jessy and I looked at Amanda in disbelief. I concentrated on her forefinger and felt its bone break.)

Amanda: fuuuuvk! Bloody hell, did you just break my finger with your bloody mind? What are you.

Me: yhea next time its gonna be your 'bloody' neck and your little witch juju can't heal that one and last time I checked you were mortal.

(We ganged up on Amanda telling her how 'bloody' insensitive she was. Each time imitating exactly how she pronounced "bloody" ... Her gods were for her because we were called to the grave yard. The ceremony hardly took an hour, I refused to speak. Mainly because I wasn't ready. I was going to come to his new home and say my good byes when I was ready, when I had avenged him and made him proud. Jessy was the last speaker...)

Jessy: (she smiled, looked up to the sky trying to avoid tears from trickling down her face. She sighed and looked at the coffin. It was beautiful. I don't even know where they got it.) I, I don't know what to say. I was not ready. Its too.... Its too soon to be saying good bye. For the first time in my life I'm thinking about what happens after death, I am praying to the gods that there really is life after, I pray that I will see you on the other side. Its too soon maan. I, I haven't even told you how crazy I am about you. How i loved you from the first time I saw you, when you tried to protect your immortal bad ass sister against supernaturals, knowing exactly you'd never win. That has to be the sweetest thing I've ever seen in my life. (Posed and sighed then continued) I will not say any further because now when I talk about you, about us I have to use a past tense and each word hurts. I love you Onke James. I will always cherish your smile, your sense of humour, your laughter (giggles a little) I'm surprised I wasn't the only one who noticed that you closed your eyes when you laugh. I'll never forget you, your beautiful warm heart. The love you had for your sister, for me and even for Rick. Its sad that the kindest die younger. I love you, I respect you for what you have done for your sister. Rest in peace my love.

(She threw the flower in the grave. Held her hands in the air and slowly put them together. In doing so, the grave closed. The soil on the sides came together. We hugged and went to eat. When all was done. I went to Olivia's house, yes without her damn permission, I scanned my eyes through her closet and chose black leggings, black vest, black hoody and black ankle boot. Damn straight I was about to morn my dead brother. I got out of the house already slaying her clothes. I bumped into her and Tyler. She froze, wabambelela esinqeni.

"are you wearing my clothes? Who gave you my clothes?" she shouted. I smiled and kissed her cheek and topped it up with spanking her tiny ass. She looked at me with her mouth wide open, then she looked at Tyler. They both shook their heads and laughed.

I went to Rick who was standing by the gate in the grave yard. I looked at him, he glanced at me.. We both looked at Onke's grave.

"its about damn time." he said, still not looking at me.

"hold on" I wrapped my arms around him and sped off to the crime scene I caused last night. We stood on the roof of the building opposite the police station. At the entrance there was a big SHE WOLF written with fresh blood. I looked at Rick and rolled up the sleeves of my hoody. "what do you think?" I asked, blushing.

"my my my!!! is this all you? I must admit, I'm a fan of your work Mrs McSmith. Its about damn time baby" he replied, totally turned on.

[03/17, 12:36] Ron: Diary of a She Wolf

Insert 55

"my my my!!! is this all you? I must admit, I'm a fan of your work Mrs McSmith. Its about damn time baby" he replied, totally turned on. I just glanced at him and smiled then I looked back at the scene.

Rick: so what's your plan? Why making such loud noise?

Me: I'm sending a message. To my brother.

Rick: (he smiled and nodded his head) so you are luring your brother to the town!!

Me: we can't find him, it was the only was to make him come to us!

Rick: damn I wanna kiss you right now. (He posed, like in second thought) you didn't tell Alex, did you?

Me: Alex isn't like you... Like us.

Rick: haha you should have seen him when you were dead, he was the hottest thing alive.

Me: it wasn't him, you know that.

Rick: if that makes you sleep at night. So, what now? I can't wait to look your older brother in the eye...

Me: you can just say my brother, I have only one brother now.

(I said and took the stairs to the exit downstairs. He followed.)

Rick: how are we going to know he is here?

Me: we won't. They don't have a scent, I can't smell them. So we will not go to them, they will come to us.

(He nodded. When we took the last stair case in the ground floor, I heard the main exist door closing; violently. The building was being renovated so it was empty. After what they called a brutal animal attack at the police station, the town was cleared. I looked up, it was a dark girl, almost my complexion. She had a smirk arrogant smile drawn in her face which showed her deep dimples, the kind of dimples that look like they were drilled. So not sexy. Her face looked familiar. I stood few feet towards her, my hands clutched in a fist. Rick wrapped his arm around my neck. He looked at the girl.

Rick: hello love, may we pass please. (Looking at me) do you know her?

(The girl- Nancy just giggled. Rick raised his eye brows, Nancy replied with a wave of a hand which sent us flying across the room)

Nancy: a self proclaimed big bad werewolf and the most powerful witch in the world. I have been waiting for this day. To show you, you are nothing.

(She said the last word slowly. I just giggled)

Nancy: is there something funny, bitch?

(I kept quiet)

Nancy: I'm talking to you, are you deaf? (She shouted, I just smiled) you know I can make your blood boil with just a single look. I asked you a question, is there something funny?

Me: (I stood up, sighed and dusted jeans) look at me; my eyes are red, I am an Alpha,,,, I don't speak to puppets, show me your master! I will speak only to your master. (I said taking steps forward. )

Nancy: I will wipe that arrogance out of your face. I will kill you.

Me: you have tried way too many times and failed , if you had brains you'd know by know that I am immortal and a hybrid. (With that said I fried her brains, by only concentrating on her and pictured what I wish to happen to her. She held the sides of her head and screamed, slowly kneeling down. )

Rick: damn I love you. You are bloody hot.



(He said standing next to me, I just smiled, he winked. Then a door opened again. "Stop, baby sis what's with all this violence? Oh my God." My brother followed by an army of armed hunters. My heart skipped a beat when I saw their silver bow arrows but then I remembered that silver doesn't work on me. Nothing does, I was immortal – to the literally meaning of the word. And I was stronger, I could stop a bullet or bow arrow with my damn mind! What was there to be afraid of? They died when they declared war with me. )

Kwanda: you look beautiful as always, just skinnier now. Don't you get enough satisfaction in feeding from the innocent. (looking at Rick) Oh hello, you must be the famous reckless witch. Where's your puppet? Where's our brother?

Me: you killed him. I'm sorry I didn't know your address I would have invited you to his funeral.

(He looked surprised a little but tried to hide it.)

Kwanda: they were linked. (He looked at Nancy with a disapproving look)

Nancy: ( getting up from the floor and shrugging her shoulders) don't give me that look. I linked them, the spell I did works, don't ask me how she is alive.

(They all looked at me)

Me: you killed Onke and my unborn child...

Kwanda: nyevula lomlonyana wakho dikazi ndini, you are out numbered. This is your last day seeing the light. I know you can't die but we have something nice planned for you, she is going to stop your blood from flowing then we are going to bury you alive.

Rick: news flash- they tried burying her but she came right back to life. Are we going to spend the rest of the day with pep talks or we are going to fight like monsters who have been craving to tear each other from limb to limb.

(Like a well trained hunter, Kwanda took out two silver knives and threw them at me and Rick, I shifted the one direct to Rick, it missed his eyes, I was stabbed on my neck. Rick looked at me "thank you" he said with his arrogant murderous voice and pulled the knife out on my neck. I healed, right there. They all stood there almost in awe!

"lets make it fun"

I said, held his hand and sped off to the second floor, they looked around asking each other where Rick and I disappeared to. "we are here people" I shouted, looking down to them from the second floor stairs. "come down here you son of a bitch" ... Kwanda shouted in frustration.

"Remember babe, that bitch was our mother. Make it rain Rick." I said.

"How can I say no when asked by the hottest monster. It will be my pleasure." He said this looking me straight in the eye. I found myself blushing. Still looking at me, he opened his arms like he was waiting for blessings from moon Goddess. I saw from the window, the weather

changed. It rained so hard, it poured like bekudunuse untoondo wakomkhulu!! The wind opened the windows and blew the hunters. I left Rick on the 2nd floor and jumped to the ground floor. In a blink of an eye I had two hearts in my hand, I chopped four heads... When ever my brother pulled his knife, gun or silver start I kicked it down and sped off. . . . "catch me if you can." I said before disappearing to the wind,leaving him and Nancy looking around for the bad ass she wolf they so wanted to kill. It wasn't a fair fight really. Rick and I won even before it started.

Rick stopped the wind and Rain when only Nancy and Kwanda were left. They looked around them, they were surrounded by the bodies of their friends. Rick and I went to the ground floor. Kwanda was fuming with anger.

"their blood is in your hands brother. You should have left me alone. You crossed the line when you killed my Onke."

Rick: don't be mistaken, he crossed the line when he killed our unborn child. This is for her, she who I have never got to hold, I never got to father."

Onke rubbed his forefinger together with his thumb and chanted something. I saw Kwanda's eyes, coming out. He cried so painful. I found myself sniffing for him, a lump grew in my throat as I witnessed him bleeding through his nose, mouth, ears and eyes. Nancy shouted to Rick to stop, she then begged me to ask Rick to stop. Rick was lost to a spell. I shook him, telling him to stop, I had to howl to get him back to the world of the living. Kwanda was still alive, just in pain. He fell down, I walked to him, picked him up and hugged him. I fed him my blood and took his pain. Rick just gave me a blank stare. My brother healed. I moved away from him. He thanked me.

"i promise baby sis I will leave you alone. I'm so sorry about Onke, I know how much you loved him, I'm sorry about your child. Its, its mom and dad...they fed me all this crap, you healed me ,if you were the Monster they painted you to be you would have let your friend to kill me. I'm so sorry baby sis.

(I looked at him, tilted my head to right and smiled)

Me: (I sighed) oh brother, that Mellisa died when Onke took his last breath. I healed you so you can witness the death of your bitch.

(I walked to Nancy with my long claws showing. I had her pinned against the wall before she could do any witch juju. I slowly put my claws to her chest, making my way to her heart. Kwanda screamed at me to stop, Rick pinned him against the wall and made him watch, standing still – muscles jammed.

"i have something you want so I suggest you take your hands off me." Nancy said, confident.

"What can I possible want from you. Gotta ya." I ripped her heart out from her chest and sighed as I dropped it to the floor. Her mistake was to think about what I would possible want from her,

by thinking about it she lost all the hold she had on me, she lost her upper hand, we were in contact so I easily read her mind.

I looked at Rick.

"It looks like we won't be killing my brother after all. Thanks to Nancy."

Rick: what was she talking about?

Me: resurrection spell baby. But it will need a human sacrifice of the same blood as the person we want to resurrect.

Rick: Kwanda for Onke. I want to kiss your ass right now.

(We took Kwanda back to the Royal territory. Amanda wasn't pleased with the plan because the spell was very dark, it was going to open doors to dark magic that Rick always wanted. With that much power I couldn't trust any of them so I performed the spell myself. It was confirmed that I was a hybrid. My lost child left her powers with me. She was a product of a very powerful witch and a pure werewolf that resulted to her to be a hybrid with even more powers, when she died all those powers were transferred to me. I did the spell I took from Nancy's head. I stabbed Kwanda in the heart to bring Onke back, we took Onke's body out of the grave and waited. We all surrounded him and watched him as he started to heal. It was unbelievable. After 3 hours impatiently waiting for him to wake up he finally opened his eyes like he was woken from an unpleasant dream. He gasped for air, before he could take a second breath I had him in my arms... Jessy joined the bone crush hung! It was overwhelming. Onke was alive.

I sacrificed the brother who wanted to kill me, the brother who killed my unborn child, the brother who made my life a living hell- for a brother who gave up his normal life to be on the run with me, for the brother I loved dearly. I killed Kwanda to bring Onke back to life and I will gladly live with that. My OJ was back, my life was complete. The void was filled.

With me, Rick, Jessy and Amanda the Royal blood became the most powerful pack in werewolf species. They all bowed down, we were the most respected. My love for Alex grew everyday...so did my friendship with Rick but everyday we got closer to the truth that Him and I will forever be friends, nothing more. Power makes you immortal. We had all the power in the world. Jessy consumed my blood everyday, she ended up being able to bury a town without losing it. The hunters problem was out of the way after we killed Kwanda and his army.

We lived happily ever after. We were a dream to most packs. My pack, my family, my life. I will forever be grateful. There's a happy ending after all.

T H E E N D